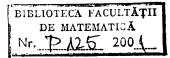
# S T U D I A UNIVERSITATIS BABEŞ-BOLYAI



Redacția: 3400 Cluj-Napoca, str. M. Kogalniceanu nr. 1 • Telefon: 194315

## SUMAR - CONTENTS - SOMMAIRE

C. Antonescu, Properties of a New Class of Absolutely Summing Operators
• Proprietăți ale unei noi clase de operatori cu insumare absolută 3
A. Domokos, Perturbation Analysis of Monotone Generalized Equations • Analiza
perturbativă a ecuațiilor monotone generalizate
L.P. Georgiev, On the Goursat problem for hyperbolic functional-differential
equations • Asupra problemei Goursat pentru ecuații hiperbolice funcțional-
diferențiale39
B.G. PACHAPATTE, Global Existence and Estimates for Solutions of Certain Higher
Order Differential Equations • Existența globală și estimări pentru soluțiile
unor ecuații de ordin mai înalt53
R. Precup, Analysis of Some Neutral Delay Differential Equations • Analiza unor
ecuații diferențiale cu întârziere de tip neutral67
I. RADOMIR, On the Univalence of Functions Related to Hypergeometric Functions



• Asupra univalenței funcțiilor legate de funcțiile hipergeometrice85
I.A. Rus, Fiber Picard Operators Theorem and Applications • Teorema operatorilor
Picard fibrați și aplicații89
MA. ŞERBAN, Fiber $\varphi$ -contractions • $\varphi$ -contraţii fibrate
N. Tiţa, Some Approximation Ideals • Anumite ideale de aproximare109

## PROPERTIES OF A NEW CLASS OF ABSOLUTELY SUMMING OPERATORS

#### CRISTINA ANTONESCU

Abstract. In [1] there was been introduced a new class of absolutely summing operators and there was been obtained some of its properties and, also, the relations with the known classes of absolutely summing operators.

In this article we go on with the study of the properties of this new operator class.

#### 1. Preliminaries

We shall just refer briefly to those notions and results which are necessary for the proofs.

Let E, F be Banach spaces over the field  $\Gamma$ , where  $\Gamma$  is the set of the real or of the complex numbers. In the sequel we shall use the following notations:

- 1)  $L(E, F) := \{T : E \to F : T \text{ is linear and bounded} \}$ .
- 2)  $E^* := L(E, \Gamma)$ .
- 3)  $U_E := \{x \in E : ||x|| < 1\}$ .
- 4) For  $a \in E^*$  and  $x \in E$ , let  $\langle x, a \rangle := a(x)$ .
- 5) Let  $a \in E^*$  and  $y \in F$ . We denote by  $a \otimes y$  the following operator

$$a \otimes y : E \to F$$
,  $(a \otimes y)(x) = \langle x, a \rangle \cdot y$ , for all  $x \in E$ .

6) We denote by  $l_{\infty}$  the set of all real number sequences,  $\{x_n\}_n$ , with the property

Key words and phrases. p-absolutely summing operators, p-q absolutely summing operators, symmetric norming function, Lorentz-Zygmund sequence ideals.

$$||x||_{\infty} := \sup_{n \text{ natural}} |x_n| < \infty.$$

7) We denote by  $c_0$  the set of all real number sequences,  $\{x_n\}_n$ , with the property

$$\lim_{n\to\infty}|x_n|=0.$$

8) We denote by  $l_p$ ,  $0 , the set of all real number sequences, <math>\{x_n\}_n$ , with the property

$$||x||_p := \left(\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} |x_n|^p\right)^{\frac{1}{p}} < \infty.$$

## Definition 1. ([7])

For 
$$x = \{x_n\}_n \in l_\infty$$
, let  $s_n(x) := \inf \{\sigma > 0 : card\{i : |x_i| > \sigma\} < n\}$ .

## Remark 1. ([7])

If the sequence  $x=\{x_n\}_n\in l_\infty$  is ordered such that  $|x_n|\geq |x_{n+1}|$ , for any natural n, then

$$s_n(x) = |x_n|$$
.

## Proposition 2. ([7])

The numbers  $s_n(x)$  have the following properties:

1. 
$$||x||_{\infty} = s_1(x) \ge s_2(x) \ge \dots \ge 0$$
, for all  $x = \{x_n\}_n \in l_{\infty}$ ,

2. 
$$s_{n+m-1}(x+y) \le s_n(x) + s_m(y)$$
, for all  $x = \{x_i\}_i \in l_{\infty}, y = \{y_i\}_i \in l_{\infty}$ , and  $n, m \in \{1, 2, ...\}$ , where  $x + y = \{x_i + y_i\}_i$ ,

3. 
$$s_{n+m-1}(x \cdot y) \leq s_n(x) \cdot s_m(y)$$
, for all  $x = \{x_i\}_i \in l_{\infty}, y = \{y_i\}_i \in l_{\infty}$ , and  $n, m \in \{1, 2, ...\}$ , where  $x \cdot y = \{x_i \cdot y_i\}_i$ ,

4. If 
$$x = \{x_i\}_i \in l_{\infty}$$
 and  $card\{i : x_i \neq 0\} < n \text{ then } s_n(x) = 0$ .

Let us remark the similarity between the properties of the sequence  $s_n(x)$ , where  $x = \{x_n\}_n \in l_\infty$ , and the axioms from the definition of an additive and multiplicative s-scale, an s-scale being a rule,  $s: T \to \{s_n(T)\}_n$ , which assigns to every linear and bounded operator a scalar sequence with the following properties:

1. 
$$||T|| = s_1(T) \ge s_2(T) \ge ... \ge 0$$
, for all  $T \in L(E, F)$ ,

2. 
$$s_{n+m-1}(T+S) \le s_n(T) + s_m(S)$$
, for all  $T, S \in L(E, F)$   
and  $n, m \in \{1, 2, ...\}$ ,

3. 
$$s_{n+m-1}(T \circ S) \leq s_n(T) \cdot s_m(S)$$
, for all  $T \in L(F, F_0), S \in L(E, F)$   
and  $n, m \in \{1, 2, ...\}$ ,

4. 
$$s_n(T) = 0$$
, dim $T < n$ ,

5. 
$$s_n(I_E) = 1$$
, if  $\dim E \ge n$ , where  $I_E(x) = x$ , for all  $x \in E$ .

We call  $s_n(T)$  the n-th s-number of the operator T.

For properties, examples of s-numbers and relations between different s-numbers it can be seen [3], [4], [5], [6], [7].

We continue by giving some basic facts about the classical real interpolation method, called the K-method.

For those interested to find an introduction on interpolation theory we recommend, for example, [2], [9].

## **Definition 3.** ([2], [8])

For a compatible couple  $(X_0, X_1)$ , in the sense of the interpolation theory, of normed or quasi-normed spaces, and t > 0 consider the functional:

$$K(t,x) := \inf \{ ||x_0|| X_0|| + t \cdot ||x_1|| X_1|| : x = x_0 + x_1, x_i \in X_i, i = 0, 1 \}.$$

Let  $0 < \theta < 1$  and  $0 < q \le \infty$ . The interpolation space  $(X_0, X_1)_{\theta,q}$  is defined as follows:

$$\left(X_{0},X_{1}\right)_{\theta,q}:=\left\{x=x_{0}+x_{1},x_{i}\in X_{i},i=0,1:\left(\int\limits_{0}^{\infty}\left[t^{-\theta}\cdot K\left(t,x\right)\right]^{q}\frac{dt}{t}\right)^{\frac{1}{q}}<\infty\right\},$$

if  $q < \infty$ , and

$$(X_0, X_1)_{\theta,\infty} := \left\{ x = x_0 + x_1, x_i \in X_i, i = 0, 1 : \sup_{t>0} t^{-\theta} \cdot K(t, x) < \infty \right\}.$$

The operator classes  $P_{p,q,\gamma}$ , introduced in [1], are closed related to the Lorentz-Zygmund sequence spaces. For that we shall recall here a few things about these sequence spaces and the Lorentz-Zygmund operator ideals.

## Definition 4. ([7])

Let  $0 < p, q < \infty$  and  $-\infty < \gamma < \infty$ . The Lorentz-Zygmund sequence spaces are defined as follows

$$l_{p,q,\gamma} := \left\{ x = \left\{ x_i \right\}_i \in c_0 : \sum_{i=1}^{\infty} \left[ i^{\frac{1}{p} - \frac{1}{q}} \cdot \left( 1 + \log i \right)^{\gamma} \cdot s_i \left( x \right) \right]^q < \infty \right\}.$$

These are quasi-normed spaces, with the quasi-norm

$$\left\|x
ight\|_{p,q,\gamma}:=\left(\sum_{i=1}^{\infty}\left[i^{rac{1}{p}-rac{1}{q}}\cdot\left(1+\log i
ight)^{\gamma}\cdot s_{i}\left(x
ight)
ight]^{q}
ight)^{rac{1}{q}}.$$

## Definition 5. ([7],[8])

Let E, F be Banach spaces, s an additive s-number and 0 . We introduce the following operator classes:

$$\begin{split} L_{p,q,\gamma}^{(s)}\left(E,F\right) &:= \\ \left\{T \in L(E,F): & ||T||_{p,q,\gamma}^{(s)} := \left(\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \left[n^{\frac{1}{p}} \cdot (1 + \log n)^{\gamma} \cdot s_{n}\left(T\right)\right]^{q} \cdot n^{-1}\right)^{\frac{1}{q}} < \infty\right\}, \\ \text{and for } q &= \infty \\ L_{p,\infty,\gamma}^{(s)}\left(E,F\right) &:= \\ \left\{T \in L(E,F): & ||T||_{p,\infty,\gamma}^{(s)} := \sup_{n} n^{\frac{1}{p}} \cdot (1 + \log n)^{\gamma} \cdot s_{n}\left(T\right) < \infty\right\}. \\ \text{We denote by } L_{p,q,\gamma}^{(s)} &:= \bigcup_{E,F \text{ Banach spaces}} L_{p,q,\gamma}^{(s)}\left(E,F\right). \end{split}$$

## Remark 2. ([7], [8])

Let s be an additive s-number and  $0 , <math>0 < q \le \infty$ ,  $-\infty < \gamma < \infty$ , then  $\left(L_{p,q,\gamma}^{(s)}, ||\cdot||_{p,q,\gamma}^{(s)}\right)$  is a quasi-normed operator ideal.

We are giving now an interpolation result obtained by classical methods

## Proposition 6. ([8])

Let E,F be Banach spaces,  $0< p_0< p_1<\infty,\, 0< q_0,q_1,q\leq \infty,\, 0<\gamma_0,\gamma_1<\infty$  and  $0<\theta<1.$  Then

$$\left(L_{p_0,q_0,\gamma_0}^{(s)}\left(E,F\right),L_{p_1,q_1,\gamma_1}^{(s)}\left(E,F\right)\right)_{\theta,q}\subseteq L_{p,q,\gamma}^{(s)}\left(E,F\right), \text{ where } \frac{1}{p}=\frac{1-\theta}{p_0}+\frac{\theta}{p_1}$$
 and  $\gamma=(1-\theta)\cdot\gamma_0+\theta\cdot\gamma_1$ .

At the end of this section we shall remind the construction of the operator classes  $P_{p,q,\gamma}$  and one of the properties proved in [1].

## Definition 7. ([4])

Let E be a Banach space and I an index set. An E-valued family  $\{x_i\}_{i\in I}$  is said to be **absolutely** r-summable if  $\{||x_i||\} \in l_r(I)$ . The set of these families is denoted by  $[l_r(I), E]$ .

For  $\{x_i\}_{i\in I} \in [l_r(I), E]$  we define:

$$\|\{x_i\} \mid [l_r(I), E]\| := \left(\sum_i \|x_i\|^r\right)^{1/r}.$$

If there is no risk of confusion, then we use the shortened symbol  $\|\{x_i\} \mid l_r\|$ . Moreover, we write  $[l_r, E]$  instead of  $[l_r(N), E]$ .

## Proposition 8. ([4])

 $[l_r(I), E]$  is a Banach space.

## Definition 9. ([4])

Let E be a Banach space and I an index set. An E-valued family  $\{x_i\}_{i\in I}$  is said to be **weakly** r-summable if  $\{\langle x_i,a\rangle\}\in l_r(I)$  for all  $a\in E^*$ .

The set of these families is denoted by  $[w_r(I), E]$ . For  $\{x_i\}_{i \in I} \in [w_r(I), E]$  we define:

$$||(x_i)||[w_r(I), E]|| = \sup \left\{ \left( \sum_i |\langle x_i, a \rangle|^r \right)^{1/r} : a \in U_{E^*} \right\}.$$

If there is no risk of confusion, then we use the shortened symbol  $\|\{x_i\} \mid w_r\|$ . Moreover, we write  $[w_r, E]$  instead of  $[w_r(N), E]$ .

## Proposition 10. ([4])

 $[w_r(I), E]$  is a Banach space.

## Remark 3. ([1])

Using the Lorentz-Zygmund sequence spaces,  $l_{p,q,\gamma}$ , we can define, in a similar way, the spaces  $[l_{p,q,\gamma}\left(I\right),E]$  and  $[w_{p,q,\gamma}\left(I\right),E]$ .

## **Definition 11.** ([1])

Let E, F be Banach spaces and  $0 < p_1, p_2 < \infty, 1 \le q_2 \le q_1 < \infty, -\infty < \gamma_1, \gamma_2 < \infty$ . An operator  $T \in L(E, F)$  is called **absolutely**  $(p_{12}, q_{12}, \gamma_{12})$  -summing if there exists a constant  $c \ge 0$  such that

$$\left(\sum_{i=1}^{n} \left[ i^{\frac{1}{p_1} - \frac{1}{q_1}} \cdot (1 + \log i)^{\gamma_1} \cdot ||Tx_i|| \right]^{q_1} \right)^{\frac{1}{q_1}} \le$$

 $\leq c \cdot \sup_{a \in U_{E^{\bullet}}} \left( \sum_{i=1}^{n} \left[ i^{\frac{1}{p_{2}} - \frac{1}{q_{2}}} \cdot (1 + \log i)^{\gamma_{2}} \cdot |\langle x_{i}, a \rangle| \right]^{q_{2}} \right)^{\frac{1}{q_{2}}}, \text{ for every finite family of elements } x_{1}, \dots x_{n} \in E. \text{ The set of these operators is denoted by } P_{p_{12}, q_{12}, \gamma_{12}} \left( E, F \right).$ 

For  $T \in P_{p_{12},q_{12},\gamma_{12}}(E,F)$  we define  $\pi_{p_{12},q_{12},\gamma_{12}}(T) := \inf c$ , the infimum being taken over all constants  $c \geq 0$  for which the above inequality holds.

## Theorem 12. ([1])

 $P_{p_{12},q_{12},\gamma_{12}}$  is an injective Banach operator ideal.

## 2. Results

We start by giving a result concerning the "lexicografic order" of the Lorentz-Zygmund sequence spaces.

#### Proposition 13.

We have the following inclusion:

$$l_{p,q_0,\gamma} \subset l_{p,q_1,\gamma}$$
, where  $0 ,  $0 < q_0 < q_1 < \infty$ ,  $\gamma > 0$ .$ 

*Proof.* We whall need the following result, established by N. Tiţa, in [8], for the operator ideal case.

## Proposition 14.

Let  $0 , <math>0 < q < \infty$  and  $0 < \gamma < \infty$  then

$$\left\{x_n\right\}_n \in l_{p,q,\gamma} \Leftrightarrow \left\{2^{\frac{n-1}{p}} \cdot s_{2^{n-1}}\left(x\right)\right\}_n \in l_{r,q}, \text{ where } \gamma = \frac{1}{r} - \frac{1}{q}.$$

Moreoever there are the constants c and  $\bar{c}$ , which depend on  $p, q, \gamma$ , such that:

$$c \cdot \left\| \left\{ 2^{\frac{n-1}{p}} \cdot s_{2^{n-1}}\left(x\right) \right\}_n \right\|_{r,q} \leq \left\| x \right\|_{p,q,\gamma} \leq \overline{c} \cdot \left\| \left\{ 2^{\frac{n-1}{p}} \cdot s_{2^{n-1}}\left(x\right) \right\}_n \right\|_{r,q}.$$

We start now our proof.

Let 
$$\xi = \left\{\xi_n\right\}_n \in l_{p,q_0,\gamma} \Leftrightarrow \left\{2^{\frac{n-1}{p}} \cdot s_{2^{n-1}}\left(\xi\right)\right\}_n \in l_{r,q_0}$$
, where  $\gamma = \frac{1}{r} - \frac{1}{q_0}$ .

Let  $q_1 > q_0$  and  $r_1$  such that  $\gamma = \frac{1}{r_1} - \frac{1}{q_1}$ . It follows that

$$\frac{1}{r} - \frac{1}{q_0} = \frac{1}{r_1} - \frac{1}{q_1} \Leftrightarrow \frac{1}{r_1} = \frac{1}{r} + \left(\frac{1}{q_1} - \frac{1}{q_2}\right) \Rightarrow \frac{1}{r_1} < \frac{1}{r} \Rightarrow r_1 > r.$$

From the "lexicografic orderliness" of the Lorentz sequence spaces, [4], [7], we know that  $l_{r,q_0} \subseteq l_{r_1,q_1}$ .

So 
$$\left\{2^{\frac{n-1}{p}} \cdot s_{2^{n-1}}(\xi)\right\}_n \in l_{r,q_1} \Leftrightarrow \xi = \left\{\xi_n\right\}_n \in l_{p,q_1,\gamma}.$$
  
In conclusion  $l_{p,q_0,\gamma} \subset l_{p,q_1,\gamma}$ , for  $0 ,  $0 < q_0 < q_1 < \infty$ ,  $\gamma > 0$ .$ 

## Proposition 15.

Let  $0 < p_0 < p_1 < \infty$ ,  $0 < q_0, q_1, q \le \infty$ ,  $0 < \gamma_0, \gamma_1 < \infty$  and  $0 < \theta < 1$ . Then  $(l_{p_0,q_0,\gamma_0}, l_{p_1,q_1,\gamma_1})_{\theta,q} \subseteq l_{p,q,\gamma}$ , where  $\frac{1}{p} = \frac{1-\theta}{p_0} + \frac{\theta}{p_1}$  and  $\gamma = (1-\theta) \cdot \gamma_0 + \theta \cdot \gamma_1$ .

*Proof.* If we take account of the similarity between the properties of the sequences  $\{s_n(T)\}_n$ , where s is an additive s-scale,  $T \in L(E,F)$ , and  $\{s_n(x)\}_n$ , where  $x = \{x_n\}_n \in l_{\infty}$ , the proof of the above inclusion will have the same course like the proof of the Proposition 6.

We shall consider  $q < \infty$ , the proof of the case  $q = \infty$  being similar.

From the Proposition 13 it follows that we have the inclusion

$$(l_{p_0,q_0,\gamma_0},l_{p_1,q_1,\gamma_1})_{\theta,q} \subseteq (l_{p_0,\infty,\gamma_0},l_{p_1,\infty,\gamma_1})_{\theta,q}$$

So it will be enough to prove the relation

$$(l_{p_0,\infty,\gamma_0},l_{p_1,\infty,\gamma_1})_{\theta,q}\subseteq l_{p,q,\gamma}.$$

Let  $x = \{x_n\}_n \in (l_{p_0,\infty,\gamma_0}, l_{p_1,\infty,\gamma_1})_{\theta,g}$ . We shall consider the arbitrary decomposition

$$\begin{aligned} x &= x^0 + x^1 \text{, where } x^i = \left\{x_n^i\right\}_n \in l_{p_i,\infty,\gamma_i}, \ i \in \{0,1\}. \\ \text{Let } i &\in \{0,1\} \text{ then} \\ x^i &= \left\{x_n^i\right\}_n \in l_{p_i,\infty,\gamma_i} \Leftrightarrow \\ \Leftrightarrow \left\|x^i\right\|_{p_i,\infty,\gamma_i} &= \sup_n \left[n^{\frac{1}{p_i}} \cdot (1 + \log n)^{\gamma_i} \cdot s_n\left(x^i\right)\right] < \infty \Rightarrow \\ \Rightarrow s_n\left(x^i\right) &\leq n^{-\frac{1}{p_i}} \cdot (1 + \log n)^{-\gamma_i} \cdot \left\|x^i\right\|_{p_i,\infty,\gamma_i}, \text{ for any natural } n. \end{aligned}$$

$$\text{We shall evaluate } \|x\|_{p,q,\gamma}.$$

$$\left( \|x\|_{p,q,\gamma} \right)^{q} = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \left[ n^{\frac{1}{p}} \cdot (1 + \log n)^{\gamma} \cdot s_{n}(x) \right]^{q} \cdot \frac{1}{n} =$$

$$= \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \left[ (2 \cdot n - 1)^{\frac{1}{p} - \frac{1}{q}} \cdot (1 + \log(2 \cdot n - 1))^{\gamma} \cdot s_{2 \cdot n - 1}(x) \right]^{q} +$$

$$+ \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \left[ (2 \cdot n)^{\frac{1}{p} - \frac{1}{q}} \cdot (1 + \log(2 \cdot n))^{\gamma} \cdot s_{2 \cdot n}(x) \right]^{q} \leq$$

$$\leq \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \left[ (2 \cdot n - 1)^{\frac{1}{p} - \frac{1}{q}} \cdot (1 + \log(2 \cdot n - 1))^{\gamma} \cdot s_{2 \cdot n - 1}(x) \right]^{q} +$$

$$+ \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \left[ (2 \cdot n)^{\frac{1}{p} - \frac{1}{q}} \cdot (1 + \log(2 \cdot n))^{\gamma} \cdot s_{2 \cdot n - 1}(x) \right] \leq$$

$$\leq c(p, q, \gamma) \cdot \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \left[ n^{\frac{1}{p} - \frac{1}{q}} \cdot (1 + \log n)^{\gamma} \cdot s_{2 \cdot n - 1}(x) \right]^{q} \leq$$

$$\leq c(p, q, \gamma) \cdot \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \left[ n^{\frac{1}{p} - \frac{1}{q}} \cdot (1 + \log n)^{\gamma} \cdot (s_{n}(x^{0}) + s_{n}(x^{1})) \right]^{q} \leq$$

$$\leq c(p, q, \gamma) \cdot$$

$$\leq c(p, q, \gamma) \cdot$$

$$\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \left[ n^{\frac{1}{p} - \frac{1}{q}} (1 + \log n)^{\gamma - \gamma_{0}} n^{-\frac{1}{p_{0}}} (\|x^{0}\|_{p_{0}, \infty, \gamma_{0}} + n^{\frac{1}{p_{0}} - \frac{1}{p_{1}}} (1 + \log n)^{\gamma_{0} - \gamma_{1}} \|x^{1}\|_{p_{1}, \infty, \gamma_{1}}) \right]^{q} .$$

The decomposition  $x = x^0 + x^1$  being arbitrary and taking account of the

#### K-functional's definition

$$\begin{split} &K\left(x,n^{\frac{1}{p_0}-\frac{1}{p_1}}\cdot(1+\log n)^{\gamma_0-\gamma_1},l_{p_0,\infty,\gamma_0},l_{p_1,\infty,\gamma_1}\right) \text{ we obtain that} \\ &\|x^0\|_{p_0,\infty,\gamma_0}+n^{\frac{1}{p_0}-\frac{1}{p_1}}\cdot(1+\log n)^{\gamma_0-\gamma_1}\cdot\|x^1\|_{p_1,\infty,\gamma_1} \leq \\ &\leq K\left(x,n^{\frac{1}{p_0}-\frac{1}{p_1}}\cdot(1+\log n)^{\gamma_0-\gamma_1},l_{p_0,\infty,\gamma_0},l_{p_1,\infty,\gamma_1}\right). \\ &\text{So } \left(\|x\|_{p,q,\gamma}\right)^q \leq \\ &\leq c\cdot\sum_{n=1}^\infty \left[n^{\frac{1}{p}-\frac{1}{p_0}}\left(1+\log n\right)^{\gamma-\gamma_0}K\left(x,n^{\frac{1}{p_0}-\frac{1}{p_1}}\left(1+\log n\right)^{\gamma_0-\gamma_1}\right)\right]^q\cdot\frac{1}{n} \leq \\ &\leq c_1\cdot\int\limits_1^\infty \left[t^{\frac{1}{p}-\frac{1}{p_0}}\left(1+\log t\right)^{\gamma-\gamma_0}K\left(x,t^{\frac{1}{p_0}-\frac{1}{p_1}}\left(1+\log t\right)^{\gamma_0-\gamma_1}\right)\right]^q\frac{dt}{t} = \\ &= c_1\cdot\int\limits_1^\infty \left[t^{\frac{1-\theta}{p_0}+\frac{\theta}{p_1}-\frac{1}{p_0}}\left(1+\log t\right)^{(1-\theta)\gamma_0+\theta\gamma_1-\gamma_0}K\left(x,t^{\frac{1}{p_0}-\frac{1}{p_1}}\left(1+\log t\right)^{\gamma_0-\gamma_1}\right)\right]^q\frac{dt}{t} = \end{split}$$

$$=c_1\cdot\int\limits_1^\infty \left[t^{-\theta\left(\frac{1}{p_0}-\frac{1}{p_1}\right)}\left(1+logt\right)^{-\theta\left(\gamma_0-\gamma_1\right)}K\left(x,t^{\frac{1}{p_0}-\frac{1}{p_1}}\left(1+logt\right)^{\gamma_0-\gamma_1}\right)\right]^q\frac{dt}{t}=\\=c_1\cdot\int\limits_1^\infty \left[\left(t^{\frac{1}{p_0}-\frac{1}{p_1}}\cdot\left(1+logt\right)^{\gamma_0-\gamma_1}\right)^{-\theta}\cdot K\left(x,t^{\frac{1}{p_0}-\frac{1}{p_1}}\cdot\left(1+logt\right)^{\gamma_0-\gamma_1}\right)\right]^q\frac{dt}{t}.$$
 Let now define  $f:(1,\infty)\to(0,\infty)$ ,  $f(t)=t^{\frac{1}{p_0}-\frac{1}{p_1}}\cdot\left(1+logt\right)^{\gamma_0-\gamma_1}$ . 
$$f'(t)\cdot t=\left(\frac{1}{p_0}-\frac{1}{p_1}\right)\cdot t^{\frac{1}{p_0}-\frac{1}{p_1}}\cdot\left(1+logt\right)^{\gamma_0-\gamma_1}+\\+\left(\gamma_0-\gamma_1\right)\cdot t^{\frac{1}{p_0}-\frac{1}{p_1}}\cdot\left(1+logt\right)^{\gamma_0-\gamma_1}\cdot\frac{1}{1+logt}\cdot c_2=\\=t^{\frac{1}{p_0}-\frac{1}{p_1}}\cdot\left(1+logt\right)^{\gamma_0-\gamma_1}\cdot\left(\frac{1}{p_0}-\frac{1}{p_1}+\left(\gamma_0-\gamma_1\right)\cdot\frac{1}{1+logt}\cdot c_2\right)\leq c_3\cdot f(t).$$
 Hence we obtain  $\left(||x||_{p,q,\gamma}\right)^q\leq\\\leq c_1\cdot\int\limits_1^\infty \left[\left(t^{\frac{1}{p_0}-\frac{1}{p_1}}\cdot\left(1+logt\right)^{\gamma_0-\gamma_1}\right)^{-\theta}\cdot K\left(x,t^{\frac{1}{p_0}-\frac{1}{p_1}}\cdot\left(1+logt\right)^{\gamma_0-\gamma_1}\right)\right]^q\frac{dt}{t}=\\=c_1\cdot\int\limits_1^\infty \left[f(t)^{-\theta}\cdot K\left(x,f(t)\right)\right]^q\cdot f'(t)\cdot\frac{1}{f'(t)\cdot t}dt\leq c_3\cdot\int\limits_1^\infty \left[f(t)^{-\theta}\cdot K\left(x,f(t)\right)\right]^q\cdot \frac{1}{f(t)}\cdot f'(t)\cdot dt=\\=c_3\cdot\int\limits_0^\infty \left[s^{-\theta}\cdot K\left(x,s\right)\right]^q\cdot \frac{ds}{s}<\infty.$  (We have made the following change of variable  $f(t)=s$ .)

#### Proposition 16.

Let I be any infinite index set. An operator  $T \in L(E,F)$  is absolutely  $(p_{12},q_{12},\gamma_{12})$  -summing if and only if  $T(I):\{x_i\}_{i\in I}\to \{Tx_i\}_i$  defines a linear and bounded operator from  $[w_{p_2,q_2,\gamma_2}(I),E]$  into  $[l_{p_1,q_1,\gamma_1}(I),F]$ . When this is so, then

$$\pi_{p_{12},q_{12},\gamma_{12}}(T) = ||T(I):[w_{p_{2},q_{2},\gamma_{2}}(I),E] \rightarrow [l_{p_{1},q_{1},\gamma_{1}}(I),F]||.$$

*Proof.* It is similar to the proof for the similar result for absolutely (r, s) –summing operators, see Proposition 1.2.2 from [3].

Suppose that  $T\in P_{p_{12},q_{12},\gamma_{12}}\left(E,F\right)$  and  $(x_i)_{i\in I}\in [w_{p_2,q_2,\gamma_2}\left(I\right),E]$ . Then we have

$$\begin{split} \left(\sum_{i}\left[i^{\frac{1}{p_{1}}-\frac{1}{q_{1}}}\cdot\left(1+\log i\right)^{\gamma_{1}}\cdot\left\|Tx_{i}\right\|\right]^{q_{1}}\right)^{\frac{1}{q_{1}}} \leq \\ &\leq \pi_{p_{12},q_{12},\gamma_{12}}\left(T\right)\cdot\sup_{a\in U_{E^{\bullet}}}\left(\sum_{i}\left[i^{\frac{1}{p_{2}}-\frac{1}{q_{2}}}\cdot\left(1+\log i\right)^{\gamma_{2}}\cdot\left|\left\langle x_{i},a\right\rangle\right|\right]^{q_{2}}\right)^{\frac{1}{q_{2}}}, \text{ for all } F,\\ F\in\mathbf{F}\left(I\right). \text{ Passing to the limit } I \text{ yields} \end{split}$$

 $\|(Tx_i)_{i\in I} \mid [l_{p_1,q_1,\gamma_1}(I),F]\| \leq \pi_{p_{12},q_{12},\gamma_{12}}(T) \cdot \|(x_i)_{i\in I} \mid [w_{p_2,q_2,\gamma_2}(I),E]\|.$  This proves that

$$||T(I):[w_{p_2,q_2,\gamma_2}(I),E] \to [l_{p_1,q_1,\gamma_1}(I),F]|| \leq \pi_{p_{12},q_{12},\gamma_{12}}(T)$$
.

The reverse inequality is obvious.

#### Theorem 17. (interpolation theorem)

Let E, F be Banach spaces. If  $0 < p_1 < p_3 < \infty, 0 < p_2 < \infty, 0 < q_1, q_2, q_3, q_4 < \infty, 0 < \gamma_1, \gamma_3 < \infty \text{ and } 0 < \theta < 1$ , then

$$(P_{p_{12},q_{12},\gamma_{12}}\left(E,F\right),P_{p_{32},q_{32},\gamma_{32}}\left(E,F\right))_{\theta,q_{4}}\subseteq P_{p_{42},q_{42},\gamma_{42}}\left(E,F\right), \text{ where } \frac{1}{p_{4}}=\frac{1-\theta}{p_{1}}+\frac{\theta}{p_{3}} \text{ and } \gamma_{4}=(1-\theta)\cdot\gamma_{1}+\theta\cdot\gamma_{3}.$$

*Proof.* We use the idea from the proof of the **interpolation theorem** for the **absolutely** (p,q)—summing operators. This theorem can be found in [4], Proposition 1.2.6.

Let  $\{x_i\}_i \in [w_{p_2,q_2,\gamma_2}, F]$ . We define the operator

 $X: T \in L(E,F) \to \{Tx_i\}_i \text{. From the Proposition 16 it follows that, for } T \in P_{p_{12},q_{12},\gamma_{12}}(E,F), \{Tx_i\}_i \in [l_{p_1,q_1,\gamma_1},F] \text{ and, for } T \in P_{p_{32},q_{32},\gamma_{32}}(E,F), \{Tx_i\}_i \in [l_{p_3,q_3,\gamma_3},F].$ 

So for

$$T \in (P_{p_{12},q_{12},\gamma_{12}}(E,F), P_{p_{32},q_{32},\gamma_{32}}(E,F))_{\theta,q_{4}} \Rightarrow$$

$$\Rightarrow \{Tx_{i}\}_{i} \in ([l_{p_{1},q_{1},\gamma_{1}},F], [l_{p_{3},q_{3},\gamma_{3}},F])_{\theta,q_{4}} \subseteq [l_{p_{4},q_{4},\gamma_{4}},F]. \text{ We have applied}$$
the Proposition 15.

In conclusion

$$X: T \in (P_{p_{12},q_{12},\gamma_{12}}(E,F), P_{p_{32},q_{32},\gamma_{32}}(E,F))_{\theta,q_4} \to \{Tx_i\}_i \in [l_{p_4,q_4,\gamma_4},F].$$
 Hence the assertion follows from the Proposition 16.

#### References

- [1] C. Antonescu, C. Pârvulescu, A. Subţire, A new class of absolutely summing operators, Proc. of the Conf. Held in Honour of Professor Elena Popoviciu, Cluj-Napoca, October 15-16, 1999, pp. 16-26.
- [2] J. Bergh, J. Löfstrom, Interpolation spaces, Springer Verlag, 1976.

- [3] B.Carl, I. Stephani, Entropy, compactness and the approximation of operators, Cambridge Univ. Press, Cambridge, 1990.
- [4] A. Pietsch, Eigenvalues and s-numbers, Cambridge Univ. Press, Cambridge, 1987.
- [5] N. Tiţa, Norming operator ideals, Braşov Univ. Press, Braşov, 1979.(in Romanian)
  [6] N. Tiţa, Complements of operator ideals, Braşov Univ. Press, Braşov, 1983.(in Romanian)
- [7] N. Tiţa, Operator ideals generated by s-numbers, Edit. Transilvania, Braşov, 1998.(in Romanian)
- [8] N. Tiţa, Some properties of Lorentz-Zygmund ideals, preprint 1999.
- [9] H. Triebel, Interpolation theory, functions spaces, differential operators, North Holland, 1980.

"Dr. I. Meşotă" Secondary School, 2200 Braşov, Romania  $E\text{-}mail\ address:\ adiant efx.ro$ 

## PERTURBATION ANALYSIS OF MONOTONE GENERALIZED EQUATIONS

#### ANDRÁS DOMOKOS

Abstract. Our goal is to establish new methods and results in reflexive Banach spaces to the theory of local stability of the solutions of some non-compact generalized equations, including parametric variational inequalities. The continuity of the projections of a fixed point onto a family of nonempty, closed, convex sets will be also studied using these methods. The results from this paper generalize results proved in finit dimensional spaces and Hilbert spaces.

#### 0. Introduction

Stability topics for parametric variational inequalities were studied in many papers in finite or in infinite dimensional Hilbert spaces [1, 3, 4, 8, 11]. The proofs in those papers are closely connected with the Hilbert spaces' properties (for example, the nonexpansivity of the metric projection onto a closed, convex set).

Our method is independent from the above mentioned properties and also from compactness assumptions (for compact perturbation of monotone operators see [7].

Papers [3, 11] use the strong-monotonicity condition in finite dimensional spaces. We will replace this condition by a weaker one,  $\varphi$ -uniform-monotonicity (used also in [1]). In Banach spaces this is a weaker and more usefull condition, (see Proposition 1.1, Examples 5.1 and 5.3) that the strong-monotonicity.

We will discuss also some aspects with respect to a consistency condition. Consistency conditions are frequently used in the theory of implicit function theorems [1, 2, 4]. Our condition is a generalization of those used in [1, 4]. We will show that the

<sup>1991</sup> Mathematics Subject Classification. 49J40, 49K40.

Key words and phrases, normalized duality mapping, normal cone operator, variational inequality,  $\varphi$ -uniformly-monotone mappings, metric projection.

consistency condition is satisfied under reasonable conditions, as pseudo-continuity or lower-semicontinuity (see Corollary 2.1, Examples 5.1 and 5.2). The continuity of the projection of a fixed point onto a family of nonempty, closed, convex sets implies the consistency of the normal cone operator. A result similar to the Hölder continuity of the projections of a fixed point onto a pseudo-Lipschitz continuous family of closed convex sets [11] holds for uniformly-convex Banach spaces. We will use a generalization of the metric projection operator introduced by E. Zarantonello [12].

We will denote by  $\Omega$ ,  $\Lambda$ , W topological spaces and by X a reflexive Banach space. Throughout this paper we will work with the fixed points  $x_0 \in X$ ,  $\omega_0 \in \Omega$ ,  $\lambda_0 \in \Lambda$ ,  $w_0 \in W$  and with their neighborhoods  $X_0 = B(x_0, r)$  (the closed ball centered at  $x_0$  and radius r) of  $x_0$ ,  $\Omega_0$  of  $\omega_0$ ,  $\Lambda_0$  of  $\lambda_0$ , and  $W_0$  of  $w_0$ . We need a single-valued mapping  $f: X_0 \times \Omega_0 \to X^*$ , a set-valued mapping  $F: X_0 \times W_0 \leadsto X^*$  and an other set-valued mapping  $C: \Lambda_0 \leadsto X$  with nonempty, closed, convex values.

Let us consider the following parametric variational inequality

$$\begin{cases} \text{ find } x \in C(\lambda) \text{ such that} \\ \langle f(x,\omega), y - x \rangle \geq 0, \text{ for all } y \in C(\lambda) \end{cases}$$
  $(VI(\omega,\lambda))$ 

and the equivalent generalized equation

$$0 \in f(x,\omega) + N_{C(\lambda)}(x) , \qquad (GE(\omega,\lambda))$$

where

$$N_{C(\lambda)}(x) = \{x^* \in X^* : (x^*, y - x) \le 0, \text{ for all } y \in C(\lambda)\}$$

is the normal cone to the set  $C(\lambda)$  at the point x.

The normal cone mappings  $N_{C(\lambda)}: X \sim X^*$  are maximal-monotone, because the sets  $C(\lambda)$  are nonempty, closed and convex.

In a reflexive Banach space we can introduce equivalent norms for which the space is strictly-convex with strictly-convex dual or locally uniform-convex with locally uniform-convex dual. The continuity and monotonicity properties from this paper remain the same when we use these equivalent norms, so we can use them when we need better properties for the duality mapping.

#### 1. Preliminary results

In this section we present basic definitions and results.

**Definition 1.1.** [1] The mappings  $F(\cdot, w)$  are said  $\varphi$ -uniformly-monotone for all  $w \in W_0$ , if there exists an increasing function  $\varphi : \mathbf{R}_+ \to \mathbf{R}_+$ , with  $\varphi(r) > 0$  when r > 0, such that for all  $w \in W_0$ ,  $x_1, x_2 \in Dom F(\cdot, w)$ ,  $x_1^* \in F(x_1, w)$ ,  $x_2^* \in F(x_2, w)$  hold

$$\langle x_1^* - x_2^*, x_1 - x_2 \rangle > \varphi(||x_1 - x_2||) ||x_1 - x_2||$$
.

If the function  $\varphi$  is defined as  $\varphi(r) = ar$ , with a > 0, then the mappings  $F(\cdot, w)$  are said strongly-monotone with constant a.

The following proposition shows that  $\varphi$ -uniform-monotonicity is a natural one in uniformly-convex spaces.

**Proposition 1.1.** [10] A Banach space X is uniformly-convex if and only if for each R > 0 there exists an increasing function  $\varphi_R : \mathbf{R}_+ \to \mathbf{R}_+$ , with  $\varphi_R(r) > 0$  when r > 0, such that the normalized duality mapping  $J : X \leadsto X^*$ , defined by

$$J(x) = \left\{ x^* \in X^* : \langle x^*, x \rangle = ||x||^2, ||x|| = ||x^*|| \right\},\,$$

is  $\varphi_R$ -uniformly-monotone in B(0,R).

**Definition 1.2.** Let  $A, B \subset X$ . The Hausdorff distance between A, B is defined as

$$H(A,B) = \max\{e(A,B), e(B,A)\},\$$

where

$$c(A, B) = \sup_{a \in A} \inf_{b \in B} ||a - b||.$$

**Definition 1.3.** Let  $(\Lambda, d)$  be a metric space.

a) The set-valued mapping C is pseudo-continuous at  $(\lambda_0, x_0) \in Graph C$  if there exist neighborhoods  $V \subset \Lambda_0$  of  $\lambda_0$ ,  $U \subset X_0$  of  $x_0$  and there exists a function  $\beta : \mathbf{R}_+ \to \mathbf{R}_+$  continuous at 0, with  $\beta(0) = 0$ , such that

$$C(\lambda_0) \cap U \subset C(\lambda) + \beta (d(\lambda, \lambda_0)) B(0, 1)$$
 (1.1)

$$C(\lambda) \cap U \subset C(\lambda_0) + \beta(d(\lambda, \lambda_0)) B(0, 1)$$
 (1.2)

for all  $\lambda \in V$ .

b) The set-valued mapping C is pseudo-continuous around  $(\lambda_0, x_0) \in Graph C$  if there exist neighborhoods  $V \subset \Lambda_0$  of  $\lambda_0$ ,  $U \subset X_0$  of  $x_0$  and there exists a function  $\beta : \mathbf{R}_+ \to \mathbf{R}_+$  continuous at 0, with  $\beta(0) = 0$ , such that

$$C(\lambda_1) \cap U \subset C(\lambda_2) + \beta \left( d(\lambda_1, \lambda_2) \right) B(0, 1) \tag{1.3}$$

for all  $\lambda_1, \lambda_2 \in V$ .

- c) If the function  $\beta$  is defined as  $\beta(r) = Lr$ , with  $L \geq 0$ , then we say that C is pseudo-Lipschitz continuous at  $(\lambda_0, x_0)$  (resp. around  $(\lambda_0, x_0)$ ).
- d) The set-valued mapping C is pseudo-continuous on the set  $\Lambda_1 \subset \Lambda_0$ , if it is pseudo-continuous at each point  $(\lambda, x) \in Graph C$ ,  $\lambda \in \Lambda_1$ .

Remark 1.1. If the set-valued mapping  $C(\cdot) \cap X_0$  is continuous with respect to the Hausdorff distance at  $\lambda_0$  (resp. in a neighborhood of  $\lambda_0$ ), then the set-valued mapping C is pseudo-continuous at  $(\lambda_0, x_0)$  (resp. around  $(\lambda_0, x_0)$ ).

In [11] it is proved the following theorem:

**Theorem 1.1.** In the case of  $\Omega \subset \mathbb{R}^m$ ,  $\Lambda \subset \mathbb{R}^p$ ,  $X = \mathbb{R}^n$ , let us suppose:

- (i)  $x_0$  is a solution of  $VI(\omega_0, \lambda_0)$ ;
- (ii) there exists l > 0 such that

$$||f(x_1,\omega_1)-f(x_2,\omega_2)|| \leq l(||x_1-x_2||+||\omega_1-\omega_2||)$$
,

for all  $x_1, x_2 \in X_0, \omega_1, \omega_2 \in \Omega_0$ ;

- (iii) the mappings  $f(\cdot,\omega)$  are strongly-monotone with a constant a>0, for all  $\omega\in\Omega_0$ ;
- (iv) the set-valued mapping C is pseudo-Lipschitz continuous around  $(\lambda_0, x_0) \in Graph C$ Then there exist constants  $l_{\omega_0}$ ,  $l_{\lambda_0} \geq 0$  and there exist neighborhoods  $\Omega' \subset \Omega_0$  of  $\omega_0$ ,  $\Lambda' \subset \Lambda_0$  of  $\lambda_0$  such that:

a) for every  $(\omega, \lambda) \in \Omega' \times \Lambda'$  there exists a unique solution  $x(\omega, \lambda)$  of  $VI(\omega, \lambda)$ ; b) for all  $(\omega_1, \lambda_1)$ ,  $(\omega_2, \lambda_2) \in \Omega' \times \Lambda'$  we have

$$||x(\omega_1,\lambda_1)-x(\omega_2,\lambda_2)|| \leq |l_{\omega_0}||\omega_1-\omega_2||+|l_{\lambda_0}||\lambda_1-\lambda_2||^{\frac{1}{2}}$$

The Hölder continuity with respect to  $\lambda$  it is the consequence of the following result :

**Proposition 1.2.** [11] Let  $\Omega \subset \mathbf{R}^p$  and  $X = \mathbf{R}^n$ . Let us assume that the set-valued mapping C is pseudo-Lipschitz continuous around  $(\lambda_0, x_0)$ .

Then there exist neghborhoods  $\Omega' \subset \Omega_0$  of  $\omega_0$  and  $X' \subset X_0$  of  $x_0$  and there exists a constant l' > 0 such that

$$||P_{C(\lambda_1)\cap X_0}(x) - P_{C(\lambda_2)\cap X_0}(x)|| \le l'||\lambda_1 - \lambda_2||^{\frac{1}{2}},$$

for all  $\lambda_1$ ,  $\lambda_2 \in \Lambda'$  and  $x \in X'$ .

We denoted by  $P_{C(\lambda)\cap X_0}(x)$  the metric projection of the point x onto the set  $C(\lambda)\cap X_0$ , i.e. the unique point in  $C(\lambda)\cap X_0$  with minimal distance to x.

The continuity of  $C(\cdot) \cap X_0$ , with respect to the Hausdorff distance, at  $\lambda_0$  is assumed in [3] and the continuity of  $P_{C(\lambda) \cap X_0}$  at  $\lambda_0$  is proved.

## 2. An implicit function theorem for monotone mappings

In this section we will show that Theorem 4.3 of [1] remains true when we suppose X a reflexive Banach space (Theorem 2.1). We will use this theorem to study the stability of the solutions of  $VI(\omega, \lambda)$ , using only the consistency of the normal cone operator which is a weaker property then the continuity of the projections of a fixed point onto a family of nonempty, closed, convex sets.

**Lemma 2.1.** [5] Let  $T: X \leadsto X^*$  be a maximal-monotone set-valued mapping. For all integers  $k \ge 1$  we define the following single-valued mappings:

$$P_k = (J + kT)^{-1} : X^* \to X$$
.

If a sequence  $(x_k)$ , with  $x_{k+1} = P_k(Jx_k)$  is bounded, then there exists  $\overline{x} \in X$  such that  $0 \in T(\overline{x})$  and  $(x_k)$  has a subsequence weakly converging to  $\overline{x}$ .

**Remark 2.1.** From  $x_{k+1} = P_k(Jx_k)$  we have

$$\frac{1}{k}(Jx_k-Jx_{k+1})\in T(x_{k+1})\;,$$

so  $x_{k+1} \in D(T)$ .

If D(T) is bounded, then  $(x_k)$  is also bounded and T has a zero in D(T).

If  $T_1 = T + N_{B(0,\varepsilon)}$  is maximal-monotone for an  $\varepsilon > 0$ , then there exists  $x \in B(0,\varepsilon)$  such that  $0 \in T(x) + N_{B(0,\varepsilon)}$ . If  $||x|| < \varepsilon$ , then  $0 \in T(x)$ .

**Lemma 2.2.** Let  $T: X \sim X^*$  be a maximal-monotone map. We suppose that there exist  $0 < \delta < \varepsilon$  such that  $D(T) \cap int B(0, \varepsilon) \neq \emptyset$  and  $\langle y, x \rangle > 0$ , for all  $x \in X$ , with  $\delta \leq ||x|| \leq \varepsilon$  and for all  $y \in T(x)$ .

Then there exists  $\overline{x} \in B(0, \delta)$ , such that  $0 \in T(\overline{x})$ .

*Proof.* Because of  $D(T) \cap int B(0,\varepsilon) \neq \emptyset$ ,  $T_1 = T + N_{B(0,\varepsilon)}$  is a maximal-monotone mapping with  $D(T_1) = B(0,\varepsilon)$ .

If  $x \in B(0, \varepsilon)$  and  $y_1 \in T_1(x)$ , then there exist  $y \in T(x)$ ,  $n \in N_{B(0,\varepsilon)}(x)$  with n = 0 or  $n = \lambda J(x)$ ,  $\lambda > 0$ , such that  $y_1 = y + n$ .

Then  $\langle y_1, x \rangle = \langle y + n, x \rangle \geq \langle y, x \rangle$  and hence the assumptions of Lemma 2.2 are also satisfied by  $T_1$ .

Let us denote

$$P_k(x) = (J + kT_1)^{-1}(Jx), x_1 = 0, x_{k+1} = P_k(x_k).$$

We will prove that  $||x_k|| \le \delta$ , for all  $k \ge 1$ .

Let us suppose the contrary and let  $k_0$  be the first integer such that  $||x_{k_0}|| \leq \delta$  and  $||x_{k_0+1}|| > \delta$ . Then

$$Jx_{k_0} \in Jx_{k_0+1} + k_0T_1(x_{k_0+1}),$$

so  $x_{k_0+1} \in D(T_1) = B(0,\varepsilon)$  and there exists  $u_{k_0+1} \in T_1(x_{k_0+1})$ , such that

$$Jx_{k_0} = Jx_{k_0+1} + k_0u_{k_0+1}$$
.

Then

$$||Jx_{k_0}||||x_{k_0+1}|| \geq \langle x_{k_0+1}, Jx_{k_0} \rangle = \langle x_{k_0+1}, Jx_{k_0+1} \rangle + k_0 \langle x_{k_0+1}, u_{k_0+1} \rangle >$$

$$> ||x_{k_0+1}||^2$$
.

Hence  $||x_{k_0}|| = ||Jx_{k_0}|| > ||x_{k_0+1}|| > \delta$ , which is a contradiction.

So,  $(x_k) \subset B(0, \delta)$  and using Lemma 2.1 together with the weakly-compactness of  $B(0, \delta)$ , we can found  $\overline{x} \in B(0, \delta)$ , such that  $0 \in T_1(\overline{x})$ .

But  $N_{B(0,\epsilon)}(\overline{x}) = \{0\}$ , so  $0 \in T(\overline{x})$ .

## **Remark 2.2.** Let us fix an $x_0 \in X$ .

If we use Lemma 2.2 for  $F(x) = T(x + x_0)$  we get:

Let  $0 < \delta < \varepsilon$  be such that  $D(T) \cap \operatorname{int} B(x_0, \varepsilon) \neq \emptyset$  and  $\langle y, x \rangle > 0$ , for all  $x \in X$  with  $\delta \leq ||x|| \leq \varepsilon$  and for all  $y \in T(x + x_0)$ .

Then there exists  $\overline{x} \in B(x_0, \delta)$ , such that  $0 \in T(\overline{x})$ .

**Definition 2.1.** Let  $F: X \times W \leadsto X^*$  be a set-valued map and let  $y_0 \in F(x_0, w_0)$ .

We say that F is consistent with respect to w at  $(x_0, w_0, y_0)$  in a neighborhood  $W_0$  of  $w_0$ , if there exists a function  $\beta: W_0 \to \mathbf{R}_+$ , continuous at  $w_0$ , with  $\beta(w_0) = 0$ , such that for all  $w \in W_0$  there exists  $(x_w, y_w) \in GraphT(\cdot, w)$ , satisfying  $||x_w - x_0|| \leq \beta(w)$  and  $||y_w - y_0|| \leq \beta(w)$ .

**Remark 2.3.** For example, F is consistent in w at  $(x_0, w_0, y_0)$ , if  $F(\cdot, w_0)$  has a continuous selection trough  $(x_0, y_0) \in \operatorname{Graph} F(\cdot, w_0)$ .

In [4] it is used a stronger assumption  $(x_w = x_0 \text{ for all } w \in W_0)$ , but in the study of the parametric variational inequalities this form cannot be used. We will show also that the normal cone operator is consistent if the projection operator is continuous with respect to the parameter  $\lambda$ .

The following theorem is the generalization of the Theorem 4.3 of [1], in the case of reflexive Banach spaces. We will suppose that X is renormed strictly-convex with strictly-convex dual.

#### **Theorem 2.1.** Let us assume that:

- i)  $0 \in F(x_0, w_0)$ ;
- ii) F is consistent with respect to w at  $(x_0, w_0, 0)$  in  $W_0$ ;

iii) the set-valued mappings  $F(\cdot, w)$  are maximal-monotone and  $\varphi$ -uniformly-monotone for all  $w \in W_0$ .

Then there exists a neighborhood  $W_1$  of  $w_0$  and a unique mapping  $x:W_1 \to X_0$ , continuous at  $w_0$ , such that  $x(w_0) = x_0$  and  $0 \in F(x(w), w)$ , for all  $w \in W_1$ .

*Proof.* Let us fix  $0 < \varepsilon < \varepsilon_1$  such that  $B(x_0, \varepsilon_1) \subset X_0$ . Let  $W' \subset W_0$  be a neighborhood of  $w_0$ , such that  $\beta(w) < \varepsilon_1$ , for all  $w \in W'$ .

Let  $0 < \delta \le \varepsilon$  and  $w \in W'$  be choosen arbitrarily.

Then  $D(F(\cdot, w)) \cap int B(x_0, \varepsilon_1) \neq \emptyset$ , because from assumption ii, there exists  $(x_w, y_w) \in \operatorname{Graph} F(\cdot, w)$ , such that  $||x_w - x_0|| \leq \beta(w) < \varepsilon_1$  and  $||y_w|| \leq \beta(w)$ .

Let us choose  $x \in X$ , with  $\delta \le ||x|| \le \varepsilon$  and  $y \in F(x + x_w, w)$ . Then

$$\varphi(||x||)||x|| < \langle y - y_w, x \rangle = \langle y, x \rangle - \langle y_w, x \rangle$$

and hence

$$\langle y, x \rangle > \varphi(\delta)\delta - \varepsilon\beta(w)$$
.

Let us denote  $M_w = \{\delta > 0 : \delta \varphi(\delta) > \varepsilon \beta(w)\}.$ 

We can see that  $M_w \neq \emptyset$  for all w in a neighborhood  $W_1 \subset W'$  of  $w_0$  and  $\inf M_w \to 0$ , when  $w \to w_0$ . So, we can choose a selection  $\delta(w) \in M_w$ , such that  $\delta(w) \to 0$ , when  $w \to w_0$ .

Using Remark 2.2 we can find, for all  $w \in W_1$ , a solution  $x(w) \in B(x_w, \delta(w))$  of [3] and this solution is unique because of the  $\varphi$ -uniform-monotonicity of  $F(\cdot, w)$ . We have also

$$||x(w) - x_0|| \le ||x(w) - x_w|| + ||x_w - x_0|| \le \delta(w) + \beta(w) \to 0$$
,

when  $w \to w_0$ .

**Remark 2.4.** In the case when F is a single valued mapping the assumptions of Theorem 2.1 can be written as:

- i)  $0 = F(x_0, w_0);$
- ii) the mapping F is continuous at  $(x_0, w_0)$ ;
- iii) the mappings  $F(\cdot,w)$  are hemicontinuous and  $\varphi$ -uniformly-monotone on  $X_0$ , for 22

all  $w \in W_0$ .

In the following two corollaries we will study the continuity of the solutions in a neighborhood of the fixed parameter  $\omega_0$ .

Corollary 2.1. Let (W, d) be a metric space.

If we replace assumption ii) of Theorem 2.1 by:

ii') the set-valued mappings  $F(x,\cdot)$  are pseudo-continuous on  $W_0$ , for all  $x \in X_0$ , then the mapping x is continuous in a neighborhood of  $w_0$ .

Proof. We will show that the pseudo-continuity at  $(w_0, 0) \in \operatorname{Graph} F(x_0, \cdot)$  implies the consistency condition ii). Indeed, there exist neighborhoods U of  $0_{X^*}$ , V of  $w_0$ and a function  $\beta_0 : \mathbf{R}_+ \to \mathbf{R}_+$  continuous at 0, with  $\beta_0(0) = 0$ , such that

$$F(x_0, w_0) \cap U \subset F(x_0, w) + \beta_0(d(w, w_0))B(0, 1)$$

and

$$F(x_0, w) \cap U \subset F(x_0, w_0) + \beta_0(d(w, w_0))B(0, 1)$$

for all  $w \in V$ . Hence, for  $0 \in F(x_0, w_0) \cap U$  and for all  $w \in V$ , there exists  $z_w \in F(x_0, w)$  such that  $||z_w|| \leq \beta_0(d(w, w_0))$ .

Now we use Theorem 2.1 to obtain a neighborhood  $W_1$  of  $w_0$  and a unique mapping  $x:W_1\to X_0$  continuous at  $w_0$ , with  $x(w_0)=x_0$  and  $0\in F(x(w),w)$  for all  $w\in W_1$ . The continuity of the mapping x at  $w_0$  implies that there exists an open neighborhood  $W_1'\subset W_1$  of  $w_0$ , such that  $x(w)\in \operatorname{int} X_0$  for all  $w\in W_1'$ .

If we choose  $\overline{w} \in W_1'$  arbitrarily, a constant  $\overline{r} > 0$ , such that  $B(x(\overline{w}), \overline{r}) \subset X_0$  and we use the pseudo-continuity of  $F(x(\overline{w}), \cdot)$  at  $(\overline{w}, 0)$ , which implies the consistency at  $(x(\overline{w}), \overline{w}, 0)$ , then we can use Theorem 2.1 to find a neighborhood  $\overline{W} \subset W_1$  of  $\overline{w}$  and a unique mapping  $\overline{x} : \overline{W} \to B(x(\overline{w}), \overline{r})$  continuous at  $\overline{w}$ , such that  $\overline{x}(\overline{w}) = x(\overline{w})$ , and  $0 \in F(\overline{x}(w), w)$  for all  $w \in \overline{W}$ . The uniqueness of the mappings x and  $\overline{x}$  implies that they coincide on  $\overline{W}$ , so we have proved the continuity of the mapping x at  $\overline{w}$ . Because  $\overline{w}$  has been choosen arbitrarily, the continuity holds on  $W_1'$ .

Corollary 2.2. Let (W, d) be a metric space. Let us suppose that in Theorem 2.1 we replace assumption ii) by:

 $ii_L$ ) there exists a constant L>0 and for each  $x\in X_0$  there exists a neighborhood  $U_x$  of  $0_{X^*}$  such that

$$F(x, w_1) \cap U_x \subset F(x, w_2) + Ld(w_1, w_2)B(0, 1)$$

for all  $w_1, w_2 \in W_0$ ,

and assumption iii) by:

 $iii_L$ ) the set-valued mappings  $F(\cdot, w)$  are maximal-monotone and strongly-monotone with a constant a > 0, for all  $w \in W_0$ .

Then the mapping x is Lipschitz-continuous, with the constant  $\frac{L}{a}$ , in a neighborhood of  $w_0$ .

*Proof.* Using Corollary 2.1 we obtain a neighborhood  $W'_1$  of  $w_0$ , such that the mapping x is continuous on  $W'_1$ .

Let us choose  $w_1, w_2 \in W_1'$  arbitrarily. Assumption  $ii_L$ ) implies that for  $x(w_1) \in X_0$  there exists a neighborhood U of  $0_{X^*}$  such that

$$F(x(w_1), z) \cap U \subset F(x(w_1), t) + Ld(z, t)B(0, 1)$$

for all  $z, t \in W_0$ .

Hence for  $0 \in F(x(w_1), w_1) \cap U$  there exists  $z_2 \in F(x(w_1), w_2)$  such that  $||z_2|| \le Ld(w_1, w_2)$ . Then

$$|a||x(w_1) - x(w_2)||^2 \le \langle z_2 - 0, x(w_1) - x(w_2) \rangle \le$$
  
 $\le ||z_2|| ||x(w_1) - x(w_2)||.$ 

So,

$$||x(w_1) - x(w_2)|| \le \frac{L}{a}d(w_1, w_2)$$
.

In the followings we will apply Theorem 2.1 in the study of  $VI(\omega, \lambda)$ . We suppose the consistency of the normal cone operator instead of the continuity, with respect to parameters, of the projections. The adventage of this approache is that the assumptions a-d) of Theorem 2.2 are independent from the geometrical properties of the reflexive Banach space X. We will show also that, in locally-uniform convex Banach spaces with locally-uniform convex dual, the consistency is a weaker property that the continuity of the projection. Assumption iii) of Theorem 1.1, due to Proposition 1.2, implies the continuity of the projections which it is supposed also in [1] and [3].

## **Theorem 2.2.** Let us suppose that:

- a)  $0 \in f(x_0, \omega_0) + N_{C(\lambda_0)}(x_0)$ ;
- b) f is continuous on  $X_0 \times \Omega_0$ ;
- c) the mapping  $N(x, \lambda) = N_{C(\lambda) \cap X_0}(x)$  is consistent with respect to  $\lambda$  at  $(x_0, \lambda_0, -f(x_0, \omega_0))$  in  $\Lambda_0$ ;
- d) the mappings  $f(\cdot,\omega)$  are  $\varphi$ -uniformly-monotone on  $X_0$ , for all  $\omega \in \Omega_0$ .

Then there exist neighborhoods  $\Omega_1$  and  $\Lambda_1$  of  $\omega_0$  and  $\lambda_0$  and a unique mapping  $x:\Omega_1\times\Lambda_1\to X_0$ , continuous at  $(\omega_0,\lambda_0)$ , such that  $x(\omega_0,\lambda_0)=x_0$  and  $0\in f(x(\omega,\lambda),\omega)+N_{C(\lambda)}(x(\omega,\lambda))$ .

Proof. Let us denote  $W = \Omega \times \Lambda$  and  $F(x, w) = F(x, \omega, \lambda) = f(x, \omega) + N_{C(\lambda) \cap X_0}(x)$ . The mappings  $F(\cdot, w)$  are maximal-monotone. These mappings are also  $\varphi$ -uniformly-monotone on  $X_0$  as a sum of a  $\varphi$ -uniformly-monotone and a monotone mapping.

Assumption c) implies the existence of a function  $\beta_1: \Lambda_0 \to \mathbf{R}_+$ , continuous at  $\lambda_0$ , with  $\beta_1(\lambda_0) = 0$ , such that for all  $\lambda \in \Lambda_0$  there exists  $(x_\lambda, n_\lambda) \in \operatorname{Graph} N(\cdot, \lambda)$  such that  $||x_\lambda - x_0|| \leq \beta_1(\lambda)$  and  $||n_\lambda + f(x_0, \omega_0)|| \leq \beta_1(\lambda)$ .

Let us choose  $(\omega, \lambda) \in \Omega_0 \times \Lambda_0$ .

We denote  $x_{\omega,\lambda} = x_{\lambda}$  and  $y_{\omega,\lambda} = n_{\lambda} + f(x_{\lambda},\omega)$ .

Then  $y_{\omega,\lambda} \in F(x_{\omega,\lambda},\omega,\lambda)$  and

$$||y_{\omega,\lambda}|| \le ||n_{\lambda} + f(x_0,\omega_0)|| + ||f(x_{\lambda},\omega) - f(x_0,\omega_0)|| \le$$
  
 $< \beta_1(\lambda) + ||f(x_{\lambda},\omega) - f(x_0,\omega_0)|| = \beta(\omega,\lambda).$ 

Using the continuity of f, we get  $\beta(\omega, \lambda) \to 0$ , when  $(\omega, \lambda) \to (\omega_0, \lambda_0)$ , hence the assumptions of Theorem 2.1 are satisfied and the existence and continuity at  $(\omega_0, \lambda_0)$  of the solutions of  $0 \in F(x, w)$  are proved.

When  $(\omega, \lambda)$  is close enough to  $(\omega_0, \lambda_0)$ , then  $x(\omega, \lambda) \in int X_0$  and hence  $N_{C(\lambda)}(x(\omega, \lambda)) = int X_0$ 

 $N_{C(\lambda)\cap X_0}(x(\omega,\lambda))$ , so the proof is complete.

Remark 2.5. We observe that if in Theorem 2.2 we suppose the same type of pseudocontinuities for the set-valued mapping N, as in the previous corollaries for F, then we obtain same continuities for the mapping x.

**Definition 2.2.** [12] Let  $C \subset X$  be a nonempty, closed, convex set. The projection onto C is the mapping  $P_C: X^* \to X$  defined by

$$P_C(x^*) = (J + N_C)^{-1}(x^*).$$

In the case when X is a Hilbert space, this is the metric projection onto C.

Let X be a locally-uniform convex, reflexive Banach space, with  $X^*$  locally-uniform convex. In this case the normalized duality mapping is continuous from the strong topology of X to the strong topology of  $X^*$ .

Let us define the mapping  $P: X^* \times \Lambda \to X$  by

$$P(x^*, \lambda) = P_{C(\lambda) \cap X_0}(x^*)$$
.

The following result shows that the continuity of the projection with respect to a parameter implies the consistency of the normal cone operator.

**Proposition 2.1.** If for an  $n_0 \in N(x_0, \lambda_0)$ ,  $P(Jx_0 + n_0, \cdot)$  is continuous at  $\lambda_0$ , then N is consistent with respect to  $\lambda$  at  $(x_0, \lambda_0, n_0)$  in a neighborhood of  $\lambda_0$ .

*Proof.* Let us take  $x_{\lambda} = P(Jx_0 + n_0, \lambda)$ . Because of  $x_0 = P(Jx_0 + n_0, \lambda_0)$  and the continuity of P hold  $||x_{\lambda} - x_0|| \to 0$ , when  $\lambda \to \lambda_0$ .

We have also

$$Jx_0 + n_0 \in Jx_\lambda + N(x_\lambda, \lambda)$$

and hence

$$Jx_0 + n_0 - Jx_\lambda \in N(x_\lambda, \lambda)$$
.

We can take

$$y_{\lambda} = Jx_0 + n_0 - Jx_{\lambda} ,$$

$$\beta(\lambda) = \max \left\{ \left\| x_{\lambda} - x_{0} \right\|, \left\| Jx_{\lambda} - Jx_{0} \right\| \right\}$$

and the consistency of N is proved.

#### 3. Continuity of the projection with respect to a parameter

In this section, assuming the pseudo-continuity of the set-valued mapping C, we will show that the continuity, with respect to a parameter, of the projection operator holds in a uniformly-convex Banach space. We cannot obtain the same type of Hölder-continuity as in Proposition 1.2 because, as will be shown, that holds only in Hilbert-spaces.

**Proposition 3.1.** Let  $(\Lambda, d)$  be a metric space.

Let  $A: X_0 \to X^*$  be a continuous,  $\varphi$ -uniformly-monotone mapping. Let us suppose that the set-valued mapping C is pseudo-continuous at  $(\lambda_0, x_0) \in Graph C$  and  $0 \in A(x_0) + N_{C(\lambda_0)}(x_0)$ .

Then there exist a neighborhood  $V \subset \Lambda_0$  of  $\lambda_0$ , a function  $\beta_1 : \mathbf{R}_+ \to \mathbf{R}_+$  continuous at 0, with  $\beta_1(0) = 0$ , and a constant s > 0 such that the generalized equation

$$0 \in A(x) + N_{C(\lambda)}(x) \tag{3.1}$$

has a unique solution  $x(\lambda) \in B(x_0, s)$  for all  $\lambda \in V$  and also hold

$$\varphi\left(\left|\left|x(\lambda)-x_{0}\right|\right|\right)\left|\left|x(\lambda)-x_{0}\right|\right| \leq \beta_{1}\left(d(\lambda,\lambda_{0})\right). \tag{3.2}$$

*Proof.* We choose a constant 0 < s < r such that the pseudo-continuity of C can be written as:

- there exist a function  $\beta: \mathbf{R}_+ \to \mathbf{R}_+$  continuous at 0, with  $\beta(0) = 0$ , and a neighborhood  $V' \subset \Lambda_0$  of  $\lambda_0$  such that

$$C(\lambda_0) \cap B(x_0, s) \subset C(\lambda) + \beta (d(\lambda, \lambda_0)) B(0, 1)$$

and

$$C(\lambda) \cap B(x_0, s) \subset C(\lambda_0) + \beta(d(\lambda, \lambda_0)) B(0, 1)$$

for all  $\lambda \in V'$ .

Using the continuity of  $\beta$  at 0, we can choose  $\varepsilon > 0$  such that  $B(\lambda_0, \varepsilon) \subset V'$  and  $\beta(d(\lambda, \lambda_0)) \leq s$ , for all  $\lambda \in B(\lambda_0, \varepsilon)$ .

Let us define  $V_{\varepsilon} = B(\lambda_0, \varepsilon)$ .

Let  $\lambda \in V_{\varepsilon}$  be choosen arbitrarly. Then the inclusion

$$x_0 \in C(\lambda_0) \cap B(x_0, s) \subset C(\lambda) + \beta(d(\lambda, \lambda_0)) B(0, 1)$$

implies the existence of an  $u_{\lambda} \in C(\lambda)$  such that

$$||x_0 - u_{\lambda}|| < \beta(d(\lambda, \lambda_0)) < s$$
.

This means that  $C(\lambda) \cap B(x_0, s)$  is nonempty for all  $\lambda \in V$ . Corollary 32.35 of [13] shows that the generalized equation

$$0 \in A(x) + N_{C(\lambda) \cap B(x_0,s)}(x)$$

has a unique solution  $x(\lambda) \in C(\lambda) \cap B(x_0, s)$ . So

$$\langle A(x(\lambda)), u - x(\lambda) \rangle \geq 0$$

for all  $u \in C(\lambda) \cap B(x_0, s)$ .

The pseudo-continuity of the set-valued mapping C implies that for  $x(\lambda)$  there exists an element  $u_0 \in C(\lambda_0)$  such that  $||x(\lambda) - u_0|| \leq \beta(d(\lambda, \lambda_0))$ .

Using the  $\varphi$ -uniform-monotonicity of A we obtain

$$\varphi (||x(\lambda) - x_0||) ||x(\lambda) - x_0|| \le \langle A(x(\lambda)) - A(x_0), x(\lambda) - x_0 \rangle \le 
\le \langle A(x(\lambda)) - A(x_0), x(\lambda) - x_0 \rangle + \langle A(x_0), u_0 - x_0 \rangle + 
+ \langle A(x(\lambda)), u_\lambda - x(\lambda) \rangle = 
= -\langle A(x(\lambda)), u_\lambda - x_0 \rangle + \langle A(x_0), u_0 - x(\lambda) \rangle \le 
\le ||A(x(\lambda))|| ||u_\lambda - x_0|| + ||A(x_0)|| ||u_0 - x(\lambda)|| \le 
\le 2M\beta(d(\lambda, \lambda_0)),$$

where  $M = \sup \{||A(x)|| : x \in B(x_0, s)\}$  is finite, because a continuous, monotone mapping is bounded on the interior of its domain. The inequality

$$\varphi(||x(\lambda)-x_0||) ||x(\lambda)-x_0|| \leq 2M\beta(d(\lambda,\lambda_0))$$

means that  $x(\lambda) \to x_0$ , when  $\lambda \to \lambda_0$ .

We can choose a neighborhood  $V \subset V_{\varepsilon}$  of  $\lambda_0$ , such that  $||x(\lambda) - x_0|| < s$ , for all  $\lambda \in V$ . This means that for  $\lambda \in V$ 

$$N_{C(\lambda)}(x(\lambda)) = N_{C(\lambda) \cap B(x_0,s)}(x(\lambda))$$

and hence  $x(\lambda)$  is a solution of the problem (3.1).

The inequality (3.2) is satisfied with  $\beta_1(r) = 2M\beta(r)$ .

Corollary 3.1. If in Proposition 3.1 we suppose that the set-valued mapping C is pseudo-continuous around  $(\lambda_0, x_0)$ , then

$$\varphi(||x(\lambda_1)-x(\lambda_2)||)||x(\lambda_1)-x(\lambda_2)|| \leq \beta_1(d(\lambda_1,\lambda_2)),$$

for all  $\lambda_1, \lambda_2 \in V$ .

*Proof.* Let us choose the constant 0 < s < r and the neighborhood  $V' \subset \Lambda_0$  such that

$$C(\lambda_1) \cap B(x_0, s) \subset C(\lambda_2) + \beta(d(\lambda_1, \lambda_2))B(0, 1)$$

for all  $\lambda_1, \lambda_2 \in V'$ .

As in the proof of the Proposition 3.1 we obtain the neighborhood V of  $\lambda_0$  and the solution  $x(\lambda)$  of (3.1), for all  $\lambda \in V$ .

Let us choose  $\lambda_1, \lambda_2 \in V$ . For  $x(\lambda_1) \in C(\lambda_1) \cap B(x_0, s)$  there exists  $u_2 \in C(\lambda_2)$ , such that

$$||x(\lambda_1)-u_2|| \leq \beta(d(\lambda_1,\lambda_2)).$$

For  $x(\lambda_2) \in C(\lambda_2) \cap B(x_0, s)$  there exists  $u_1 \in C(\lambda_1)$  such that

$$||x(\lambda_2)-u_1|| \leq \beta(d(\lambda_1,\lambda_2))$$
.

Then

$$arphi\left(\left|\left|x(\lambda_1)-x(\lambda_2)\right|\right|\right)\left|\left|x(\lambda_1)-x(\lambda_2)\right|\right| \le$$

$$\leq \langle A(x(\lambda_{1})) - A(x(\lambda_{2})), x(\lambda_{1}) - x(\lambda_{2}) \rangle \leq$$

$$\leq \langle A(x(\lambda_{1})) - A(x(\lambda_{2})), x(\lambda_{1}) - x(\lambda_{2}) \rangle + \langle A(x(\lambda_{1})), u_{1} - x(\lambda_{1}) \rangle +$$

$$+ \langle A(x(\lambda_{2})), u_{2} - x(\lambda_{2}) \rangle =$$

$$= \langle A(x(\lambda_{1})), u_{1} - x(\lambda_{2}) \rangle - \langle A(x(\lambda_{2})), x(\lambda_{1}) - u_{2} \rangle \leq$$

$$\leq ||A(x(\lambda_{1}))|| ||u_{1} - x(\lambda_{2})|| + ||A(x(\lambda_{2}))|| ||x(\lambda_{1}) - u_{2}|| \leq$$

$$\leq 2M\beta(d(\lambda_{1}, \lambda_{2})) = \beta_{1}(d(\lambda_{1}, \lambda_{2})).$$

Corollary 3.2. Let  $(\Lambda, d)$  be a metric space and let X be a uniformly-convex Banach space. If the set-valued mapping C is pseudo-continuous at  $(\lambda_0, x_0)$  (resp. around  $(\lambda_0, x_0)$ ), then  $P(\cdot, x^*)$  is continuous at  $\lambda_0$  (resp. in a neighborhood of  $\lambda_0$ ) for all  $x^* \in X^*$ .

Proof. Let us choose r, R > 0 such that  $x_0 \in \operatorname{int} B(0, R)$ ,  $B(x_0, r) \subset B(0, R)$ . Let us fix an element  $x^* \in X^*$ . We use Proposition 3.1 (resp. Corollary 3.1) in the case of the mapping  $A: B(x_0, r) \to X^*$ , defined by  $A(x) = J(x) - x^*$ , which is  $\varphi_R$ -uniformly-monotone due to Proposition 1.1. In this way we obtain a neighborhood V of  $\lambda_0$  and a unique mapping  $x: V \to X_0$  continuous at  $\lambda_0$  (resp. in a neighborhood of  $\lambda_0$ ), such that for all  $\lambda \in V$  we have

$$0 \in J(x(\lambda)) - x^* + N_{C(\lambda)}(x(\lambda)),$$

which means that  $x(\lambda) = P(x^*, \lambda)$ .

**Remark 3.1.** If we suppose that C is pseudo-continuous around  $(\lambda_0, x_0)$ , then  $P(\cdot, x^*)$  is continuous in a neighborhood of  $\lambda_0$ .

We observe that in a uniformly-convex Banach space, which is not a Hilbert space, we cannot prove the Hölder-continuity of Proposition 1.2, even when C is pseudo-Lipschitz continuous. The Hölder-continuity holds only in a Hilbert space because only in this case is the normalized duality mapping strongly-monotone.

## 4. Parametric variational inequalities

In this section we generalize Theorem 1.1, on the continuity of the solutions of  $VI(\omega, \lambda)$ , in the case of reflexive Banach spaces. The continuity of the projection operator or the consistency of the normal cone operator will be not supposed. A consequence of Theorem 4.1 is that all the results from [1], [3], [8], [11] remain true in reflexive Banach spaces.

We suppose that X is renormed strictly-convex with strictly-convex dual and let  $(\Lambda, d)$  be a metric space.

#### **Theorem 4.1.** Let us suppose that:

- a)  $0 \in f(x_0, \omega_0) + N_{C(\lambda_0)}(x_0);$
- b) f is continuous on  $X_0 \times \Omega_0$ ;
- c) the mappings  $f(\cdot,\omega)$  are  $\varphi$ -uniformly-monotone on  $X_0$ , for all  $\omega \in \Omega_0$ ;
- d) the set-valued mapping C is pseudo-continuous at  $(\lambda_0, x_0)$ .

Then there exist neighborhoods  $\Omega'$  of  $\omega_0$ ,  $\Lambda'$  of  $\lambda_0$  and a unique mapping  $x: \Omega' \times \Lambda' \to X_0$  continuous at  $(\omega_0, \lambda_0)$ , such that  $x(\omega_0, \lambda_0) = x_0$  and

$$0 \in f(x(\omega,\lambda),\omega) + N_{C(\lambda)}(x(\omega,\lambda))$$

for all  $\omega \in \Omega'$ ,  $\lambda \in \Lambda'$ .

*Proof.* We choose the positive constants  $\varepsilon$ , r small enough to

$$\beta(d(\lambda,\lambda_0)) < r$$
,

$$C(\lambda_0) \cap B(x_0, r) \subset C(\lambda) + \beta(d(\lambda, \lambda_0)) B(0, 1)$$

and

$$C(\lambda) \cap B(x_0, r) \subset C(\lambda_0) + \beta(d(\lambda, \lambda_0))B(0, 1)$$
,

for all  $\lambda \in B(\lambda_0, \varepsilon)$ .

As in the previous proofs, for all  $\lambda \in B(\lambda_0, \varepsilon)$ , the set  $C(\lambda) \cap B(x_0, r)$  is nonempty. Hence, for all  $(\omega, \lambda) \in \Omega_0 \times B(\lambda_0, \varepsilon)$  there exists a unique element  $x(\omega, \lambda)$  such that

$$0 \in f(x(\omega,\lambda),\omega) + N_{C(\lambda)}(x(\omega,\lambda)).$$

Using Proposition 3.1 we deduce that for all  $\omega \in \Omega_0$  the mappings  $x(\omega, \cdot)$  are continuous at  $\lambda_0$  and Theorem 2.2 implies that  $x(\cdot, \lambda_0)$  is continuous at  $\omega_0$ .

The above continuities shows that the mapping x is continuous at  $(\omega_0, \lambda_0)$ .

Remark 4.1. As in the previous section, if we suppose that the set-valued mapping C is pseudo-continuous around  $(\lambda_0, x_0)$ , then the solution mapping x is continuous in a neighborhood of  $(\omega_0, \lambda_0)$ .

## 5. Applications

The reason of the following examples is to show that Theorem 2.1 is usefull in the study of the continuity of the solutions of parametric integral equations and evolution differential inclusions. We will also show that the consistency condition appear under well-known assumptions and it is important because some of the mappings are not defined everywhere, they have only dense domains.

**Example 5.1.** Let  $(a,b) \subset \mathbf{R}$  be an open interval, let p,q > 1 be such that  $\frac{1}{p} + \frac{1}{q} = 1$ , let  $\lambda_0 \in \mathbf{R}$ , let  $\Lambda_0$  be a neighborhood of  $\lambda_0$  and let  $u_0 \in L^p(a,b)$ .

We suppose that the mappings  $F:(a,b)\times \mathbf{R}\times \Lambda_0\to \mathbf{R}$  and  $K:(a,b)\times (a,b)\to \mathbf{R}$  satisfy the following conditions:

- $(F_1)$  the mappings  $F(\cdot, r, \lambda)$  are measurable for all  $r \in \mathbf{R}$  and  $\lambda \in \Lambda_0$ ;
- $(F_2)$  the mappings  $F(x,\cdot,\lambda)$  are continuous a.e.  $x\in(a,b)$  and  $\lambda\in\Lambda_0$ ;
- (F3) for each  $\lambda \in \Lambda_0$  there exist  $g_{\lambda} \in L^q(a,b)$  and  $c_{\lambda} > 0$  such that

$$|F(x,r,\lambda)| \leq g_{\lambda}(x) + c_{\lambda}|r|^{p-1}$$

for all  $r \in \mathbf{R}$  and  $x \in (a, b)$ ;

 $(F_4)$  there exists a constant d > 0 such that

$$(F(x,r_1,\lambda) - F(x,r_2,\lambda))(r_1 - r_2) \ge d|r_1 - r_2|^p$$
,

for all  $x \in (a, b)$ ,  $r_1, r_2 \in \mathbf{R}$ ,  $\lambda \in \Lambda_0$ ;

(F<sub>5</sub>) the mappings  $F(\cdot, u_0(\cdot), \lambda)$  converge uniformly to  $F(\cdot, u_0(\cdot), \lambda_0)$  on (a,b), when 32

 $\lambda \to \lambda_0$ ;

 $(K_1)$  there exist constants  $c_1, c_2 > 0$ , s, t > 1 such that

$$\left(\int_{a}^{b} |K(x,y)|^{s} dx\right)^{\frac{1}{s}} \leq c_{1}, \quad a.e. \quad y \in (a,b),$$

$$\left(\int_{a}^{b} |K(x,y)|^{t} dy\right)^{\frac{1}{t}} \leq c_{2}, \quad a.e. \quad x \in (a,b),$$

$$p \geq s, \quad \left(1 - \frac{s}{n}\right) p \leq t;$$

 $(K_2)$  for all  $u \in L^p(a,b)$ ,  $u \neq 0$  we have

$$\int_a^b \int_a^b K(x,y) u(x) u(y) \, dx \, dy > 0 .$$

**Remark 5.1.** Assumptions  $(F_3)$  and  $(F_4)$  do not exclude. We can take, for example,  $F(x, r, \lambda) = x\lambda + |r|^{p-2}r$ .

Assumptions  $(F_1)$ ,  $(F_2)$ ,  $(F_3)$  imply that ([9]) for all  $\lambda \in \Lambda_0$  the mappings  $H(\cdot, \lambda)$ :  $L^p(a,b) \to L^q(a,b)$ , defined by  $H(u,\lambda)(x) = F(x,u(x),\lambda)$ , are well-defined and continuous.

Assumption  $(F_4)$  implies the  $\varphi$ -uniform-monotonicity of the mappings  $H(\cdot, \lambda)$ , with  $\varphi(r) = dr^{p-1}$ . This means that the strong-monotonicity is satisfied locally when 1 and is not satisfied when <math>2 < p.

Assumption  $(K_1)$  implies that ([9]) the mapping  $G: L^q(a,b) \to L^p(a,b)$ , defined by

$$G(v)(x) = \int_a^b K(x,y)v(y) dx ,$$

is well-defined and continuous (not nescesarrily compact).

Assumption  $(K_2)$  implies the strict-monotonicity of G.

Let us consider the following parametric Hammerstein integral equation:

$$u(x) + \int_a^b K(x, y) F(y, u(y), \lambda) dy = \omega(x) . \qquad (5.1)$$

**Proposition 5.1.** Let us consider that assumptions  $(F_1) - (F_5)$ ,  $(K_1) - (K_2)$  are satisfied and there exist  $u_0, \omega_0 \in L^p(a,b)$  such that

$$u_0(x) + \int_a^b K(x,y)F(y,u_0(y),\lambda_0) dy = \omega_0(x)$$
.

Then there exists a unique mapping  $u: L^p(a,b) \times \Lambda_0 \to L^p(a,b)$  such that  $u(\omega,\lambda)$  is a solution of (5.1) for all  $(\omega,\lambda) \in L^p(a,b) \times \Lambda_0$ ,  $u(\omega_0,\lambda_0) = u_0$  and the mapping u is continuous at  $(\omega_0,\lambda_0)$ .

*Proof.* The existence of the solutions  $u(\omega, \lambda)$  is proved in [9]. We will prove now the continuity.

Equation (5.1) can be written as

$$u + G \circ H(u, \lambda) = \omega$$

or equivalently

$$0 \in H(u,\lambda) - G^{-1}(\omega - u) .$$

We define the mapping  $T: L^p(a,b) \times L^p(a,b) \to L^q(a,b)$  by

$$T(\omega, u) = -G^{-1}(\omega - u) .$$

The mappings  $T(\omega, \cdot)$  are linear, continuous, maximal-monotone and strictly-monotone and hence  $G^{-1}$  is linear, continuous, maximal-monotone on  $Dom G^{-1}$ . We observe also that in this case  $Dom G^{-1}$  is dense in  $L^p(a,b)$  ([12]).

Let us fix  $\omega \in L^p(a,b)$ . Then we can choose  $u_{\omega} \in L^p(a,b)$  such that  $||u_{\omega} - u_0|| \le ||\omega - \omega_0||$  and  $\omega - u_{\omega} \in Dom G^{-1}$ . Hence  $G^{-1}(\omega - u_{\omega}) \to G^{-1}(\omega_0 - u_0)$ , when  $\omega \to \omega_0$ , so we proved the consistency of T with respect to  $\omega$  at  $(u_0, \omega_0, T(\omega_0, u_0))$ .

Assumption  $(F_5)$  implies that the mapping  $H(u_0, \cdot)$  is continuous at  $\lambda_0$  and using the continuity of the mappings  $H(\cdot, \lambda)$  we conclude that H is continuous at  $(u_0, \lambda_0)$ . This continuity together with the consistency of T implies that H + T is consistent with respect to  $(\omega, \lambda)$  at  $(u_0, \omega_0, \lambda_0, 0)$ .

Now we can use Theorem 2.1 for the mapping H + T to get the desired continuity.

**Example 5.2.** Let H be a Hilbert space. Let us consider the following problem:

$$\begin{cases} u' + A(u,\lambda) \ni f \\ u(0) = 0 \end{cases}$$
 (5.2)

in the case when T>0, p,q>1,  $\frac{1}{p}+\frac{1}{q}=1$ ,  $f\in L^q(0,T;H)$ ,  $\lambda_0\in\mathbf{R}$ ,  $\Lambda_0$  is a neighborhood of  $\lambda_0$ ,  $A:L^p(0,T;H)\times\Lambda_0\to L^q(0,T;H)$ .

**Definition 5.1.** Let X and Z be topological spaces. A set-valued mapping  $F: X \to Z$  is called lower-semicontinuous at  $(x_0, z_0) \in Graf F$ , if for all neighborhood  $Z_0$  of  $z_0$  there exists a neighborhood  $X_0$  of  $x_0$  such that  $F(x) \cap Z_0 \neq \emptyset$ , for all  $x \in X_0$ .

**Lemma 5.1.** [13] The linear mapping  $L: L^p(0,T;H) \to L^q(0,T;H)$ , defined by L(u) = u' and  $Dom L = \{u \in W^{1,p}(0,T;H) : u(0) = 0\}$ , is maximal-monotone.

#### Proposition 5.2. Let us suppose that:

- a) there exist  $u_0 \in Dom L$  and  $v_0 \in A(u_0, \lambda_0)$  such that  $u'_0 + v_0 f = 0$ ;
- b) the set-valued mapping A is lower-semicontinuous at  $((u_0, \lambda_0), v_0)$ ;
- c) the set-valued mappings  $A(\cdot, \lambda)$  are maximal-monotone and  $\varphi$ -uniformly-monotone for all  $\lambda \in \Lambda_0$ .

Then there exist a neighborhood  $\Lambda'$  of  $\lambda_0$  and a unique mapping  $u : \Lambda' \to L^p(0,T;H)$  such that  $u(\lambda_0) = u_0$ ,  $u(\lambda)$  is the unique solution for each  $\lambda \in \Lambda'$  for (5.2) and u is continuous at  $\lambda_0$ .

Proof. Let us denote  $X = L^p(0,T;H)$ . Assumption b) implies that for all  $\varepsilon > 0$  there exists  $\eta > 0$  such that, for all  $(u,\lambda) \in X \times \Lambda_0$ , with  $||u - u_0|| < \eta$ ,  $||\lambda - \lambda_0|| < \eta$ , hold  $A(u,\lambda) \cap B(v_0,\varepsilon) \neq \emptyset$ .

Hence for all  $\varepsilon > 0$  there exists  $v_{u,\lambda} \in A(u,\lambda)$  such that  $||v_{u,\lambda} - v_0|| \le \varepsilon$ .

Let us consider the sequence  $(\varepsilon_n)_{n\in\mathbb{N}}$ ,  $\varepsilon_n=\frac{1}{n}$ , and a corresponding sequence  $(\eta_n)_{n\in\mathbb{N}}$  converging to 0 such that  $B(\lambda_0,\eta_1)\subset\Lambda_0$ .

Let us choose arbitrarily  $\lambda \in B(\lambda_0, \eta_1)$ . Then for all  $u \in B(u_0, \eta_1)$  we have  $A(u, \lambda) \cap B(u_0, 1) \neq \emptyset$ , so  $B(u_0, \eta_1) \subset \text{Dom } A(\cdot, \lambda)$ . In this way we can see that  $L + A(\cdot, \lambda)$  is maximal-monotone and as a sum between a monotone and another  $\varphi$ -uniformly-monotone mapping, is  $\varphi$ -uniformly-monotone.

Let  $\eta_{n_{\lambda}}$  be the smallest number in the sequence  $(\eta_n)_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$  for which  $\lambda \in B(\lambda_0, \eta_{n_{\lambda}})$ . Then there exists  $v_{\lambda} \in A(u_0, \lambda)$  such that  $||v_{\lambda} - v_0|| \leq \frac{1}{n_{\lambda}}$ . Hence

$$||L(u_0) + v_{\lambda} - f|| = ||L(u_0) + v_{\lambda} - L(u_0) - v_0|| = ||v_{\lambda} - v_0|| \le \frac{1}{n_{\lambda}}.$$

We define the function  $\beta: B(\lambda_0, \eta_1) \to \mathbf{R}_+$  by

$$\beta(\lambda) = \max \left\{ \eta_{n_{\lambda}}, \frac{1}{n_{\lambda}} \right\}.$$

Using this function  $\beta$  we conclude that the mapping L + A - f is consistent with respect to  $\lambda$  at  $(u_0, \lambda_0, 0)$  in  $B(\lambda_0, \eta_1)$ . The conclusion of this proposition follows now from Theorem 2.1.

**Example 5.3.** Let  $\Omega \subset \mathbf{R}^n$  be a bounded domain,  $p, q \in \mathbf{R}_+$  such that  $2 \le p < +\infty$ ,  $\frac{1}{p} + \frac{1}{q} = 1$  and let  $\lambda \in \mathbf{R}_+$ .

We denote  $X = W_0^{1,p}(\Omega)$  and

$$a(u,v,\lambda) = \int_{\Omega} \left( \sum_{p=1}^{n} \left| \frac{\partial u}{\partial x_{i}} \right|^{p-2} \frac{\partial u}{\partial x_{i}} \frac{\partial v}{\partial x_{i}} + \lambda uv \right) dx,$$

$$F_{f}(v) = \int_{\Omega} f(x)v(x) dx.$$

Let us consider the following problem:

- for  $f \in L^q(\Omega)$  and  $\lambda \in \mathbf{R}_+$ , find  $u \in X$  such that

$$a(u, v, \lambda) = F_f(v)$$
, for all  $v \in X$ . (5.3)

Let us define the mapping  $A: \mathbf{R}_+ \times X \to X^*$  by

$$A(\lambda, u)(v) = a(u, v, \lambda) = \int_{\Omega} \left( \sum_{i=1}^{n} \left| \frac{\partial u}{\partial x_{i}} \right|^{p-2} \frac{\partial u}{\partial x_{i}} \frac{\partial v}{\partial x_{i}} + \lambda uv \right) dx.$$
 (5.4)

**Proposition 5.3.** [13] For all  $\lambda \in \mathbb{R}_+$  and  $u \in X$ , the mapping  $A(\lambda, u)$  is well-defined and the mappings  $A(\lambda, \cdot) : X \to X^*$  are continuous,  $\varphi$ -uniformly-monotone, with  $\varphi(r) = c_1 r^{p-1}$ .

**Proposition 5.4.** For all  $\lambda \in \mathbb{R}_+$  and  $f \in L^q(\Omega)$ , the problem (2.3) has a unique solution  $u(\lambda, f) \in W_0^{1,p}(\Omega)$  and these solutions are continuous in  $\lambda$  and f.

Proof. Using the surjectivity and the  $\varphi$ -uniform-monotonicity of the mappings  $A(\cdot, \lambda)$ , we deduce that for all  $f \in L^q(\Omega)$  and  $\lambda \in \mathbf{R}_+$  there exists a unique element  $u(\lambda, f) \in X$  such that  $A(u, \lambda) = F_f$ .

For all  $\lambda_1, \lambda_2 \in \mathbf{R}_+$  and  $u, v \in X$  hold

$$(A(u,\lambda_1) - A(u,\lambda_2), v) = \int_{\Omega} (\lambda_1 - \lambda_2) uv \, dx \le$$
  
$$\le |\lambda_1 - \lambda_2| ||u||_{L^2} ||v||_{L^2} \le |\lambda_1 - \lambda_2|c||u|| ||v||.$$

Hence

$$||A(u,\lambda_1) - A(u,\lambda_2)|| \leq c|\lambda_1 - \lambda_2|||u||,$$

which means that the mappings  $A(u, \cdot)$  are continuous on  $\mathbf{R}_+$ .

Let us fix  $\lambda_0 \in \mathbf{R}_+$  and  $f_0 \in L^q(\Omega)$ .

Theorem 2.1 implies the existence of a neighborhood  $\Lambda_0 \times U_0$  of  $(\lambda_0, f_0)$  and of a unique mapping  $u_0 : \Lambda_0 \times U_0 \to X$  continuous at  $(\lambda_0, f_0)$ , such that  $u_0(\lambda, f)$  is the unique solution of the problem (2.3) for all  $(\lambda, f) \in \Lambda_0 \times U_0$ . The uniqueness of the solutions implies that the mappings  $u_0$  and u coincide on  $\Lambda_0 \times U_0$ . Hence the continuity of u at  $(\lambda_0, f_0)$  is proved.

 $(\lambda_0, f_0)$  being choosed arbitrarily, the continuty holds for all  $(\lambda, f) \in \Lambda_0 \times U_0$ .

# References

- [1] Alt, W., and Kolumbán, I. (1993), Implicit function theorems for monotone mappings, Kybernetika, Prague, 29:210-221.
- [2] Aubin, J.-P., and Frankowska, H. (1990), Set-valued analysis, Birkhäuser.
- [3] Dafermos, S. (1988), Sensitivity analysis in variational inequalities, Math. Oper. Res., 13:421-434.
- [4] Domokos, A. (1997), Parametric monotone generalized equations in reflexive Banach spaces, Mathematica Pannonica, 8:129-136.
- [5] Dontchev, A. L., and Hager, W. W. (1993), Lipschitz stability in nonlinear control and optimization, SIAM J. Control Optim., 31:569-603.
- [6] Dontchev, A. L., and Hager, W. W. (1994), Implicit functions, Lipschitz maps and stability in optimization, Math. Oper. Res., 19:753-768.
- [7] Kartsatos, A. G. (1996), New results in the perturbation theorey of maximal-monotone and m-accretive operators in Banach-spaces, Transactions of the AMS, 348:1663-1707.
- [8] Kassay, G., and Kolumbán, I. (1988), Implicit function theorems for monotone mappings, Babes-Bolyai Univ. Preprint 6:7-24.
- [9] Pascali D., and Sburlan, S. (1978), Nonlinear mappings of monotone type, Sijthoff and Noordhoff Intern. Publ., Alphen aan den Rijn.
- [10] Prüß, J. (1981), A characterization of uniform-convexity and application to accretive operators, Hiroshima Math. J., 11:229-234.

#### ANDRÁS DOMOKOS

- [11] Yen, N. D. (1995), Hölder continuity of solutions to a parametric variational inequality, Appl. Math. Optim., 31:245-255.
- [12] Zarantonello, E. H. (1977), Projectors on convex sets in reflexive Banach spaces, University of Wiscosin, Technical Summary Report 1768.
- [13] Zeidler, E. (1990), Nonlinear Functional Analysis and its Applications, II/b, Springer-Verlag.

Babeş -Bolyai University, Dept. of Applied Mathematics, 3400 Cluj-Napoca, str. M. Kogalniceanu 1, Romania

# ON THE GOURSAT PROBLEM FOR HYPERBOLIC FUNCTIONAL-DIFFERENTIAL EQUATIONS

#### LUBOMIR P. GEORGIEV

It is known that in many problems of nonlinear fields theory, plasma physics and etc. (cf. [1]) arise hyperbolic functional-differential equations with so-called 'distributed' deviations (cf. [2]). The main purpose of the present paper is to formulate conditions under which there exist solutions of the Goursat problem, characteristic of functional-differential equations with 'concentrated' deviations (particular case of distributed deviations), using the fixed point theorems, proved by Angelov [3].

Typical in this respect is the following simple example, where the discontinuity of the initial function generates the discontinuity of the solution:

$$\begin{cases} u_{xy}(x,y) = k(x,y)u_{xy}(x-1,y-1), & (x,y) \in \mathbb{R}^2_+ = \{(x,y) : x > 0, y > 0\} \\ u(x,y) = \varphi(x,y), & (x,y) \in A_0 \cup B_0, \end{cases}$$
(1)

where

$$u_{xy} = \frac{\partial^{2} u}{\partial x \partial y}; \quad A_{0} = \{(x, y) : x \ge -1, -1 \le y \le 0\},$$

$$B_{0} = \{(x, y) : -1 \le x \le 0, y \ge -1\};$$

$$\varphi(x, y) = \begin{cases} 1, & (x, y) \in \mathbb{R}_{+}^{x} \cup \mathbb{R}_{+}^{y}, \\ \mathbb{R}_{+}^{x} = \{(x, y) : x \ge 0, y = 0\}, \mathbb{R}_{+}^{y} = \{(x, y) : x = 0, y \ge 0\} \\ 0, & (x, y) \in A_{0} \cup B_{0} \setminus (\mathbb{R}_{+}^{x} \cup \mathbb{R}_{+}^{y}) \end{cases}$$

$$k(x, y) = 1 - \frac{1}{1+n}, (x, y) \in A_{n} \cup B_{n} \ (n = 1, 2, ...),$$

$$A_{n} = \{(x, y) : x \ge n - 1, n - 1 \le y \le n\}, B_{n} = \{(x, y) : n - 1 \le x \le n, y \ge n - 1\}.$$

Integrating the above equation we have

$$u(x,y) - k(x,y)u(x-1,y-1) = C_1(x) + C_2(y).$$

Then the conditions

$$u(0,0) - k(0,0)u(-1,-1) = C_1(0) + C_2(0),$$
  

$$u(x,0) - k(x,0)u(x-1,-1) = C_1(x) + C_2(0),$$
  

$$u(0,y) - k(0,y)u(-1,y-1) = C_1(0) + C_2(0),$$

imply  $C_1(x) + C_2(y) = 1$ , so that we obtain the problem

$$u(x,y) = \left\{egin{array}{ll} k(x,y)u(x-1,y-1)+1, & (x,y) \in \mathbb{R}^2_+ \ arphi(x,y), & (x,y) \in A_0 \cup B_0 \end{array}
ight.$$

It is quite obvious that when  $(x, y) \in A_n \cup B_n$  then  $(x-1, y-1) \in A_{n-1} \cup B_{n-1}$ and we can construct immediately the following solution

$$u(x,y) = \begin{cases} 0, & (x,y) \in (A_0 \cup B_0) \setminus (\mathbb{R}_+^x \cup \mathbb{R}_+^y) \\ 1, & (x,y) \in (A_1 \cup B_1) \setminus (\mathbb{R}_+^{x+1} \cup \mathbb{R}_+^{y+1}) \\ (1 - \frac{1}{3}) + 1, & (x,y) \in (A_2 \cup B_2) \setminus (\mathbb{R}_+^{x+2} \cup \mathbb{R}_+^{y+2}) \\ \dots \\ (1 - \frac{1}{3}) (1 - \frac{1}{4}) \dots (1 - \frac{1}{n+1}) + (1 - \frac{1}{4}) (1 - \frac{1}{5}) \dots (1 - \frac{1}{n+1}) + \dots + \\ + (1 - \frac{1}{n+1}) + 1 = \frac{n(n+3)}{2(n+1)}, & (x,y) \in (A_n \cup B_n) \setminus (\mathbb{R}_+^{x+n} \cup \mathbb{R}_+^{y+n}) \\ \dots \end{cases}$$

where  $\mathbb{R}^{x+n}_+ = \{(x,y) : x \geq n, y = n\}, \mathbb{R}^{y+n}_+ = \{(x,y) : x = n, y \geq n\}, n = 0, 1, 2, \dots$ 

The fixed point technique for operators in metric spaces has been very well developed (cf. [4]), but the above example shows that the hyperbolic functional-differential equations of neutral type (following the terminology introduced in [5]) possesses solutions with locally essentially bounded mixed derivative  $u_{xy}$ . (We note the known results [6]-[8], where only continuous solutions have been obtained with restrictions on the deviations of retarded type.) Moreover the example shows:

- 1. the Goursat problem allows  $L_{loc}^{\infty}$ -solutions so that it cannot formulate as an operator equation in Banach or metric space.
- 2. the operator defined by the right-hand side (even in the linear case) will be not a global contraction because of  $essup\{k(x,y): x \geq 0, y \geq 0\} = 1$ .

That is why, we shall use the fixed point theorems from [3].

Let X be a Hausdorff sequentially complete uniform space with uniformity defined by a saturated family of pseudometrics  $\{\rho_{\alpha}(x,y)\}_{\alpha\in\mathcal{A}}$ ,  $\mathcal{A}$  being an index set.

Let  $\Phi = \{\Phi_{\alpha}(t) : \alpha \in \mathcal{A}\}$  be a family of functions  $\Phi_{\alpha}(t) : [0, \infty) \to [0, \infty)$  with the properties

- 1)  $\Phi_{\alpha}(t)$  is monotone non-decreasing and continuous from the right on  $[0,\infty)$ ;
- 2)  $\Phi_{\alpha}(t) < t, \forall t > 0$ ,

and  $j: \mathcal{A} \to \mathcal{A}$  is a mapping on the index set  $\mathcal{A}$  into itself, where  $j^0(\alpha) = \alpha$ ,  $j^k(\alpha) = j(j^{k-1}(\alpha)), k \in \mathbb{N}$ .

**Definition.** The map  $T: Y \to Y$  is said to be  $\Phi$ -contraction on Y if

$$\rho_{\alpha}(Tx, Ty) \leq \Phi_{\alpha}(\rho_{i(\alpha)}(x, y))$$

for every  $x, y \in Y$  and  $\alpha \in A$ ,  $Y \subset X$ .

Theorem 1. (theorem 2 from [3]) Let us suppose

- 1. the operator  $T: X \to X$  is a  $\Phi$ -contraction;
- 2. for each  $\alpha \in A$  there exists a  $\Phi$ -function  $\overline{\Phi}_{\alpha}(t)$  such that

$$\sup \{\Phi_{j^k(\alpha)}(t): \ k=0,1,2,\ldots\} \leq \overline{\Phi}_{\alpha}(t)$$

and  $\overline{\Phi}_{\alpha}(t)/t$  is non-decreasing;

3. there exists an element  $x_0 \in X$  such that  $\rho_{j^k(\alpha)}(x_0, Tx_0) \leq p(\alpha) < \infty$  (k = 0, 1, 2, ...).

Then T has at least one fixed point in X.

Theorem 2. (theorem 3 from [3]) If, in addition, we suppose that

4. the sequence  $\{\rho_{j^k(\alpha)}(x,y)\}_{k=0}^{\infty}$  is bounded for each  $\alpha \in \mathcal{A}$  and  $x,y \in X$ , i.e.

$$\rho_{j^k(\alpha)}(x,y) \leq q(x,y,\alpha) < \infty \quad (k=0,1,2,\ldots).$$

Then the fixed point of T is unique.

Consider the general Goursat problem for hyperbolic functional-differential equation:

$$u_{xy}(x,y) = F(x,y,u(\Delta,\tau),u_{x}(\alpha,\beta),u_{y}(\theta,\kappa),u_{xy}(\mu,\nu)), (x,y) \in \mathbb{R}^{2}_{+}$$

$$u(x,y) = \psi(x,y), u_{x}(x,y) = \psi_{x}(x,y), u_{y}(x,y) = \psi_{y}(x,y),$$

$$u_{xy}(x,y) = \psi_{xy}(x,y), (x,y) \in \mathbb{R}^{2} \setminus \mathbb{R}^{2}_{+},$$
(2)

where  $F(x, y, z_1, z_2, z_3, z_4)$ ,  $\Delta = \Delta(x, y)$ ,  $\tau = \tau(x, y)$ ,  $\alpha = \alpha(x, y)$ ,  $\beta = \beta(x, y)$ ,  $\theta = \theta(x, y)$ ,  $\kappa = \kappa(x, y)$ ,  $\mu = \mu(x, y)$ ,  $\nu = \nu(x, y)$  and  $\psi(x, y)$  are given functions.

We set

$$v(x, y) = u_{xy}(x, y)$$
, when  $(x, y) \in \mathbb{R}^2_+$ ,  
 $\varphi(x, y) = \psi_{xy}(x, y)$ , when  $(x, y) \in \mathbb{R}^2 \setminus \mathbb{R}^2_+$ 

and after standard calculations, we obtain

$$u(x,y) = arphi_0(x,y) + \int_0^x \int_0^y v(\xi,\eta) d\eta d\xi,$$
  $u_x(x,y) = arphi_1(x) + \int_0^y v(x,\eta) d\eta,$   $u_y(x,y) = arphi_2(y) + \int_0^x v(\xi,y) d\xi,$ 

where

$$\varphi_0(x, y) = \psi(0, y) + \psi(x, 0) - \psi(0, 0),$$

$$\varphi_1(x) = \psi_x(x, 0), \quad \varphi_2(y) = \psi_y(0, y),$$

so that the problem (2) corresponds the following problem

$$v(x,y) = \begin{cases} F(x,y,\overline{\varphi}_0 + \int_0^{\Delta} \int_0^{\tau} v(\xi,\eta) d\eta d\xi, \overline{\varphi}_1 + \int_0^{\beta} v(\alpha,\eta) d\eta, \overline{\varphi}_2 + \\ + \int_0^{\theta} v(\xi,\kappa) d\xi, v(\mu,\nu), (x,y) \in \mathbb{R}^2_+ \\ \varphi(x,y), (x,y) \in \mathbb{R}^2 \setminus \mathbb{R}^2_+, \end{cases}$$
(3)

where  $\overline{\varphi}_0 = \varphi_0(\Delta(x,y), \tau(x,y)), \overline{\varphi}_1 = \varphi_1(\alpha(x,y)), \overline{\varphi}_2 = \varphi_2(\kappa(x,y)).$ 

**Definition.** The function u(x,y) is said to be a solution (in generalized sense) of problem (2) if the function v(x,y) is a solution of problem (3).

In what follows, we look for a solution of (3), belonging to  $L^{\infty}_{loc}$ 

We say that the function  $G: \mathbb{R}^2 \to \mathbb{R}^2$  has the property (M) if inverse image of every set with null measure is measurable.

Let us suppose:

(A1)  $\psi$  is absolutely continuous;

 $\psi(x,0), \psi(0,y), \psi_x(x,0), \psi_y(0,y)$  are continuous and  $\varphi = \psi_{xy} \in L^{\infty}_{loc}(\mathbb{R}^2 \setminus \mathbb{R}^2_+)$ .

(A2) The functions  $\Delta, \tau, \alpha, \beta, \theta, \kappa, \mu, \nu : \mathbb{R}^2_+ \to \mathbb{R}$  are measurable, have the property (M) (without  $\Delta$  and  $\tau$ ) and map bounded sets into bounded sets.

 $(\mathrm{A3}) \ \forall \ (x,y) \in \mathbb{R}^2_+ \ \text{for which} \ (\Delta(x,y),\tau(x,y)) \in \mathbb{R}^2_+ \ (\text{or} \ (\alpha(x,y),\beta(x,y)) \in \mathbb{R}^2_+, \ \text{or} \ (\theta(x,y),\kappa(x,y)) \in \mathbb{R}^2_+ \ \text{is fulfilled} \ \Delta(x,y) + \tau(x,y) \leq x + y \ (\text{respectively} \ \alpha(x,y) + \beta(x,y) \leq x + y, \ \text{or} \ \theta(x,y) + \kappa(x,y) \leq x + y);$ 

 $\exists \delta_0 > 0 \text{ such that } \forall \ (x,y) \in \mathbb{R}^2_+: \ (\mu(x,y),\nu(x,y)) \in \mathbb{R}^2_+ \text{ is fulfilled } \mu(x,y) + \nu(x,y) \leq x+y-\delta_0.$ 

(A4) The function  $F(x, y, z_1, z_2, z_3, z_4)$  :  $\mathbb{R}^2_+ \times \mathbb{R}^4 \to \mathbb{R}$  satisfies the Caratheodory condition (measurable in x and y and continuous in  $z_1, \ldots, z_4$ ) and the conditions:

$$\begin{aligned} |F(x,y,z_1,z_2,z_3,z_4)| &\leq \Omega_1(x,y,|z_1|,|z_2|,|z_3|,|z_4|) \\ |F(x,y,z_1,z_2,z_3,z_4) - F(x,y,\overline{z}_1,\overline{z}_2,\overline{z}_3,\overline{z}_4)| &\leq \\ &\leq \Omega_2(x,y,|z_1-\overline{z}_1|,|z_2-\overline{z}_2|,|z_3-\overline{z}_3|,|z_4-\overline{z}_4|), \end{aligned}$$

where the functions  $\Omega_{1,2}(x,y,t_1,\ldots,t_4):\mathbb{R}^2_+\times\overline{\mathbb{R}}^4_+\to [0,\infty)$   $(\overline{\mathbb{R}}^n_+=[0,\infty)\times\cdots\times[0,\infty)$  - n times) satisfy the Caratheodory condition,  $\Omega_1(\cdot,\cdot,t_1,\ldots,t_4)\in L^\infty_{loc}(\mathbb{R}^2_+)$ ,  $\Omega_2(x,y,t_1,\ldots,t_4)$  is non-decreasing in  $t_1,\ldots,t_4$  and

$$\exists \ \omega \in L^{\infty}(\mathbb{R}^{2}_{+}) \text{ such that } \forall \ t \geq 0 \ \Omega_{2}(\cdot, \cdot, t, t, t, t) \leq t\omega(\cdot, \cdot) \text{ a.e. in } \mathbb{R}^{2}_{+}.$$

Let  $\mathcal{A}$  be the set of all compact sets  $K \subset \mathbb{R}^2$ . Denote by  $K_+ = K \cap \mathbb{R}^2_+$ , we define the map  $j: \mathcal{A} \to \mathcal{A}$ :

$$j(K) = \begin{cases} K, & K_{+} = \emptyset \\ K_{\Delta\tau} \cup K_{\alpha\beta} \cup K_{\theta\kappa} \cup K_{\mu\nu}, & K_{+} \neq \emptyset \end{cases}$$

where  $K_{\Delta\tau} = K_{\Delta} \times K_{\tau}$ ,  $K_{\alpha\beta} = K_{\alpha} \times K_{\beta}$ ,  $K_{\theta\kappa} = K_{\theta} \times K_{\kappa}$ ,

$$K_{\mu\nu} = \overline{\{(\mu(x,y),\nu(x,y)): (x,y) \in K\}}, \quad (\overline{A} \stackrel{def}{=} clA),$$

$$K_{\Delta} = \begin{cases} [\Delta_{inf}, \Delta_{sup}], & \Delta_{inf} < 0 < \Delta_{sup} \\ [0, \Delta_{sup}], & \Delta_{inf} \ge 0 \\ [\Delta_{inf}, 0], & \Delta_{sup} \le 0 \end{cases}$$

$$K_{\tau} = \begin{cases} [\tau_{inf}, \tau_{sup}], & \tau_{inf} < 0 < \tau_{sup} \\ [0, \tau_{sup}], & \tau_{inf} \ge 0 \\ [\tau_{inf}, 0], & \tau_{sup} \le 0 \end{cases}$$

$$K_{\beta} = \begin{cases} [\beta_{inf}, \beta_{sup}], & \beta_{inf} < 0 < \beta_{sup} \\ [0, \beta_{sup}], & \beta_{inf} \ge 0 \\ [\beta_{inf}, 0], & \beta_{sup} \le 0 \end{cases}$$

$$K_{\theta} = \begin{cases} [\theta_{inf}, \theta_{sup}], & \theta_{inf} < 0 < \theta_{sup} \\ [0, \theta_{sup}], & \theta_{inf} \ge 0 \\ [\theta_{inf}, 0], & \theta_{sup} \le 0 \end{cases}$$

$$K_{\alpha} = \overline{\alpha(K)}, & K_{\kappa} = \overline{\kappa(K)}$$

$$(\Delta_{inf} = \inf \{ \Delta(x, y) : (x, y) \in K_+ \}, \dots, \theta_{sup} = \sup \{ \theta(x, y) : (x, y) \in K_+ \} ).$$

It is obvious that j(K) is compact set and  $j^{l}(K)$  can be defined inductively:  $j^{l}(K) = j(j^{l-1}(K))$  for all  $l \in \mathbb{N}$ .

Now we assume:

(A5) 
$$\forall K \in \mathcal{A} \exists \widehat{K} \in \mathcal{A} : j^l(K) \subset \widehat{K} \forall l = 0, 1, 2, \dots$$

We prove the following existence-uniqueness result:

**Theorem 3.** If conditions (A1)-(A5) hold true, then there exists a unique solution  $v(x,y) \in L^{\infty}_{loc}(\mathbb{R}^2)$  of problem (3).

**Proof.** Let X be the uniform sequentially complete Hausdorff space consisting of all functions, belonging to  $L^{\infty}_{loc}(\mathbb{R}^2)$ , which equal  $\varphi(x,y)$  for a.e.  $(x,y) \in \mathbb{R}^2 \backslash \mathbb{R}^2_+$ , with a saturated family  $P = {\rho_K : K \in \mathcal{A}}$  of pseudometrics

$$\rho_K(f,g) = esssup\{e^{-\lambda(|x|+|y|)}|f(x,y) - g(x,y)|: (x,y) \in K\},\$$

where K runs over all compact subsets of  $\mathbb{R}^2$  (with some  $\lambda > 0$ ).

The operator  $T: X \to X$  is defined by the formula:

$$T(f)(x,y) = \left\{ \begin{array}{l} F(x,y,\overline{\varphi}_0 + \int_0^\Delta \int_0^\tau f(\xi,\eta) d\eta d\xi, \overline{\varphi}_1 + \int_0^\beta f(\alpha,\eta) d\eta, \overline{\varphi}_2 + \\ + \int_0^\theta f(\xi,\kappa) d\xi, f(\mu,\nu)), (x,y) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2 \\ \varphi(x,y), (x,y) \in \mathbb{R}^2 \setminus \mathbb{R}_+^2, \end{array} \right.$$

The measurability of T(f)(x, y) follows from the fact that  $\alpha, \beta, \theta, \kappa, \mu, \nu$  have the property (M).

 $T(f) \in L^{\infty}_{loc}(\mathbb{R}^2)$  because of conditions A1, A4. Consequently  $T(f) \in X$ .

Let  $K \subset \mathbb{R}^2$  be any fixed compact set. Of  $K_+ = \emptyset$  then T(f) - T(g) = 0 for all  $f, g \in X$  a.e. in K. Let  $K_+ \neq \emptyset$ . For a.e.  $(x, y) \in K \cap (\mathbb{R}^2 \setminus \mathbb{R}^2_+)$  we have T(f) - T(g) = 0.

For a.e.  $(x, y) \in K_+$  we obtain (by means of (A4)):

$$|T(f)(x,y) - T(g)(x,y)| \le$$

$$\le \Omega_2(x,y,|\int_0^{\Delta} \int_0^{\tau} (f(\xi,\eta) - g(\xi,\eta))d\eta d\xi|,|\int_0^{\beta} (f(\alpha,\eta) - g(\alpha,\eta))d\eta|,$$

$$|\int_0^{\theta} (f(\xi,\kappa) - g(\xi,\kappa))d\xi|,|f(\mu,\nu) - g(\mu,\nu)|)$$

If  $(\Delta(x,y), \tau(x,y)) \notin \mathbb{R}^2_+$  then

$$\int_0^{\Delta} \int_0^{\tau} (f(\xi, \eta) - g(\xi, \eta)) d\eta d\xi = 0$$

and respectively if  $(\alpha(x,y),\beta(x,y)) \notin \mathbb{R}^2_+$  then

$$\int_0^\beta (f(\alpha,\eta) - g(\alpha,\eta))d\eta = 0,$$

if  $(\theta(x,y),\kappa(x,y)) \notin \mathbb{R}^2_+$  then

$$\int_0^\theta (f(\xi,\kappa)-g(\xi,\kappa))d\xi=0,$$

if  $(\mu(x,y),\nu(x,y)) \notin \mathbb{R}^2_+$  then  $f(\mu,\nu) - g(\mu,\nu) = 0$ .

For positive values of  $\Delta(x,y)$ ,  $\tau(x,y)$ ;  $\alpha(x,y)$ ,  $\beta(x,y)$ ;  $\theta(x,y)$ ,  $\kappa(x,y)$ ;  $\mu(x,y)$ ,  $\nu(x,y)$  we obtain as follows:

$$|\int_0^\Delta \int_0^\tau (f(\xi,\eta)-g(\xi,\eta))d\eta d\xi| \leq \int_0^\Delta \int_0^\tau |f(\xi,\eta)-g(\xi,\eta)|d\eta d\xi \leq$$

$$\leq esssup\{e^{-\lambda(\xi+\eta)}|f(\xi,\eta)-g(\xi,\eta)|: 0 \leq \xi \leq \Delta_{sup}, 0 \leq \eta \leq \tau_{sup}\} \int_{0}^{\Delta} \int_{0}^{\tau} e^{\lambda(\xi+\eta)} d\eta d\xi = \\ = \lambda^{-2} \rho_{K_{\Delta \tau}}(f,g)(e^{\lambda\Delta}-1)(e^{\lambda\tau}-1) \leq \lambda^{-2} e^{\lambda(\Delta+\tau)} \rho_{K_{\Delta \tau}} \leq \lambda^{-2} e^{\lambda(x+y)} \rho_{K_{\Delta \tau}}(f,g)(cf.(A3)). \\ |\int_{0}^{\beta} (f(\alpha,\eta)-g(\alpha,\eta)) d\eta| \leq \int_{0}^{\beta} |f(\alpha,\eta)-g(\alpha,\eta)| d\eta \leq \\ \leq esssup\{e^{-\lambda(\alpha+\eta)}|f(\alpha,\eta)-g(\alpha,\eta)|: 0 \leq \eta \leq \beta_{sup}\} e^{\lambda\alpha} \int_{0}^{\beta} e^{\lambda\eta} d\eta \leq \\ \leq \lambda^{-1} \rho_{K_{\alpha\beta}}(f,g) e^{\lambda\alpha}(e^{\lambda\beta}-1) \leq \lambda^{-1} e^{\lambda(\alpha+\beta)} \rho_{K_{\alpha\beta}}(f,g) \leq \lambda^{-1} e^{\lambda(x+y)} \rho_{K_{\alpha\beta}}(f,g) (cf.(A3)).$$

In the same way we prove (by means of (A3)) that

$$\begin{split} |\int_0^\theta \left(f(\xi,\kappa) - g(\xi,\kappa)\right) d\xi| &\leq \lambda^{-1} e^{\lambda(x+y)} \rho_{K_{\theta\kappa}}(f,g). \\ |f(\mu,\nu) - g(\mu,\nu)| &\leq e^{\lambda(\mu+\nu)} esssup\{e^{-\lambda(p+q)} |f(p,q) - g(p,q)| : (p,q) \leq K_{\mu\nu}\} \leq \\ &\leq e^{\lambda(x+y-\delta_0)} \rho_{K_{\mu\nu}}(f,g) \leq \lambda^{-\delta_0} e^{\lambda(x+y)} \rho_{K_{\mu\nu}}(f,g) \text{ (cf.(A3))}. \end{split}$$

Let  $\lambda > 1$ . Chosing  $\gamma$  so that

$$\lambda^{-\gamma} = \max\{\lambda^{-1}, \lambda^{-\delta_0}\} = \begin{cases} \lambda^{-1}, & \delta_0 \ge 1\\ \lambda^{-\delta_0}, & 0 < \delta_0 \le 1 \end{cases}$$

we obtain (since  $\Omega_2(x, y, t_1, \dots, t_4)$  is non-decreasing in  $t_1, \dots, t_4$ )

$$|T(f)(x,y) - T(g)(x,y)| \le$$

$$\le \Omega_2(x,y,\lambda^{-\gamma}e^{\lambda(x+y)}\rho_{j(K)}(f,g),\lambda^{-\gamma}e^{\lambda(x+y)}\rho_{j(K)}(f,g),$$

$$\lambda^{-\gamma}e^{\lambda(x+y)}\rho_{j(K)}(f,g),\lambda^{-\gamma}e^{\lambda(x+y)}\rho_{j(K)}(f,g)) \le$$

$$\le \lambda^{-\gamma}e^{\lambda(x+y)}\rho_{j(K)}(f,g)\omega(x,y) \quad (cf.(A4)).$$

Define (for  $t \geq 0$ )

$$\Phi_K(t) = \begin{cases} 0, & \text{if } K_+ = \emptyset \\ t\lambda^{-\gamma} ||\omega||_{L^{\infty}(K_+)}, & \text{if } K_+ \neq \emptyset \end{cases}$$

We can find and fix  $\lambda$  so that  $\lambda^{\gamma} > ||\omega||_{L^{\infty}(\mathbb{R}^{2}_{+})}$ . Consequently  $\Phi_{K}(t) < t$   $\forall t > 0, \ \forall \ K \in \mathcal{A}$  and  $\Phi_{K}(t)$  is continuous non-decreasing in  $[0, \infty)$ . On the other hand

$$\rho_K(T(f), T(g)) = \rho_{\overline{K}_+}(T(f), T(g)) \le \Phi_k(\rho_{j(K)}(f, g)),$$

i.e.  $T: X \to X$  is a  $\Phi$ -contraction.

 $\forall \ K \in \mathcal{A} \text{ we set } \overline{\Phi}_{K} = \Phi_{\widehat{K}} \text{ (recall that (A5) assures an existence of such a } \\ \widehat{K} \text{ that } j^{l}(K) \subset \widehat{K} \text{ } (l=0,1,2,\ldots)) \text{ and so } \sup\{\Phi_{j^{l}(K)}(t): \ l=0,1,2,\ldots\} \leq \overline{\Phi}_{K}(t), \\ \overline{\Phi}_{K}(t) = const \implies \text{non-decreasing.}$ 

Hence condition 1, 2 of theorem 1 is fulfilled.

We choose the element  $f_0 \in X$ :

$$f_0(x,y) = \left\{egin{array}{ll} 0, & ext{a.e. on } \mathbb{R}^2_+ \ arphi(x,y), & (x,y) \in \mathbb{R}^2 \setminus \mathbb{R}^2_+. \end{array}
ight.$$

Then for any integer l > 0 we have

$$\rho_{j^{l}(K)}(f_{0}, T(f_{0})) \leq \rho_{\widehat{K}}(f_{0}, T(f_{0})) = \rho_{\overline{\widehat{K}_{+}}}(f_{0}, T(f_{0})) =$$

$$= esssup\{e^{-\lambda(x+y)}|F(x, y, \overline{\varphi}_{0}, \overline{\varphi}_{1}, \overline{\varphi}_{2}, 0)| : (x, y) \in \overline{\widehat{K}_{+}}\} < \infty$$

(i.e. condition 3 of theorem 1 is fulfilled).

Besides  $\rho_{j^{l}(K)}(f,g) \leq \rho_{\widehat{K}_{+}}(f,g)$  for abitrary  $f,g \in X$ , i.e. condition 4 of theorem 2 is also fulfilled.

All conditions of theorems 1 and 2 are satisfied. Therefore the problem (3) has a unique solution  $v \in L^{\infty}_{loc}(\mathbb{R}^2)$ .

We are going to formulate conditions for the existence and uniqueness of a solution of (3) belonging to  $L^p_{loc}(\mathbb{R}^2)$  for some  $p \in (1, \infty)$ :

(A1') The initial function  $\psi$  is absolutely continuous;

$$\psi(x,0), \psi(0,y), \psi_x(x,0), \psi_y(0,y)$$
 are continuous and  $\varphi = \psi_{xy} \in L^p_{loc}(\mathbb{R}^2 \setminus \mathbb{R}^2_+)$ .

(A4') The function  $F(x, y, z_1, z_2, z_3, z_4)$  :  $\mathbb{R}^2_+ \times \mathbb{R}^4 \to \mathbb{R}$  satisfies the Caratheodory condition (measurable in x and y and continuous in  $z_1, \ldots, z_4$ ) and the conditions:

$$\begin{split} |F(x,y,z_1,z_2,z_3,z_4)| &\leq a(x,y) + b(|z_1| + |z_2| + |z_3| + |z_4|) \\ |F(x,y,z_1,z_2,z_3,z_4) - F(x,y,\overline{z}_1,\overline{z}_2,\overline{z}_3,\overline{z}_4)| &\leq \\ &\leq \omega_1(x,y)|z_1 - \overline{z}_1| + \omega_2|z_2 - \overline{z}_2| + \omega_3|z_3 - \overline{z}_3| + \omega_4|z_4 - \overline{z}_4|, \\ \text{where } a(\cdot,\cdot) &\in L^p_{loc}(\mathbb{R}^2_+), \ b = const \geq 0, \ \omega_1(\cdot,\cdot) \in L^p(\mathbb{R}^2_+), \ \omega_{2,3}(\cdot) \in L^p(\mathbb{R}^1_+), \\ \omega_4 = const \geq 0 \end{split}$$

(A6) The transformations

$$\left| egin{array}{c|c} u=lpha(x,y) & u=x & u=\mu(x,y) \ v=y & v=\kappa(x,y) & v=
otag\\ \end{array} 
ight.$$

are admissible, sufficiently smooth and  $\alpha_u^*, \kappa_v^*, \frac{D(\mu^*, \nu^*)}{D(u, v)} \in L^{\infty}(\mathbb{R}^2_+)$ , where

$$(\alpha^*(\alpha(x,y),y),y) = (x,y), \quad (x,\kappa^*(x,\kappa(x,y))) = (x,y),$$

$$(\mu^*(\mu(x,y),\nu(x,y)),\nu^*(\mu(x,y),\nu(x,y))) = (x,y).$$

**Theorem 4.** If conditions (A1'), (A2), (A3), (A4'), (A5), (A6) hold true, then there exists a unique solution  $v(x,y) \in L^p_{loc}(\mathbb{R}^2)$  of problem (3).

**Proof.** Let X be the space consisting of all functions, belonging to  $L^p_{loc}(\mathbb{R}^2)$ , which equal  $\varphi(x,y)$  a.e.  $(x,y) \in \mathbb{R}^2 \setminus \mathbb{R}^2_+$ , with a saturated family P of pseudometrics

$$\rho_K(f,g) = \left(\int_K \int e^{-\lambda(|x|+|y|)} |f(x,y) - g(x,y)|^p dx dy\right)^{\frac{1}{p}} \quad (K \in \mathcal{A}),$$

where A is the family of all compact sets in  $\mathbb{R}^2$ ,  $\lambda > 0$ .

The map  $j: \mathcal{A} \to \mathcal{A}$  and the operator  $T: X \to X$  are defined as in the proof of theorem 3.

For any  $K\in\mathcal{A},\ f,g\in X$  we have T(f)(x,y)-T(g)(x,y)=0, for a.e.  $(x,y)\in K\setminus K_+;$ 

If  $(x,y) \in K_+ \neq \emptyset$ , then

$$|T(f)(x,y) - T(g)(x,y)|^{p} \leq$$

$$\leq \left(\omega_{1}(x,y)|\int_{0}^{\Delta} \int_{0}^{\tau} (f(\xi,\eta) - g(\xi,\eta))d\eta d\xi| + \omega_{2}(y)|\int_{0}^{\beta} (f(\alpha,\eta) - g(\alpha,\eta))d\eta| +$$

$$+\omega_{3}(x)|\int_{0}^{\theta} (f(\xi,\kappa) - g(\xi,\kappa))d\xi| + \omega_{4}(f(\mu,\nu) - g(\mu,\nu)|\right)^{p} \leq$$

$$\leq 4^{p-1} \left(\omega_{1}^{p}(x,y)|\int_{0}^{\Delta} \int_{0}^{\tau} (f(\xi,\eta) - g(\xi,\eta))d\eta d\xi|^{p} + \omega_{2}^{p}(y)|\int_{0}^{\beta} (f(\alpha,\eta) - g(\alpha,\eta))d\eta|^{p} +$$

$$+\omega_{3}^{p}(x)|\int_{0}^{\theta} (f(\xi,\kappa) - g(\xi,\kappa))d\xi|^{p} + \omega_{4}^{p}|f(\mu,\nu) - g(\mu,\nu)|^{p}\right).$$
If  $(\Delta,\tau), (\alpha,\beta), (\theta,\kappa), (\mu,\nu) \notin \mathbb{P}_{+}^{2}$ , then  $T(f)(x,y) - T(g)(x,y) = 0$ .

If 
$$(\Delta, \tau) \in \mathbb{R}^2_+$$
, then (with  $\frac{1}{p} + \frac{1}{q} = 1$ )
$$\left| \int_0^\Delta \int_0^\tau (f(\xi, \eta) - g(\xi, \eta)) d\eta d\xi \right|^p \le$$

$$\le \left( \int_0^\Delta \int_0^\tau |f(\xi, \eta) - g(\xi, \eta)| d\eta d\xi \right)^p =$$

$$= \left( \int_0^\Delta \int_0^\tau e^{\frac{\lambda}{p}(\xi + \eta - \xi - \eta)} |f(\xi, \eta) - g(\xi, \eta)| d\eta d\xi \right)^p \le$$

$$\le \left( \int_0^\Delta \int_0^\tau e^{\frac{q\lambda}{p}(\xi + \eta)} d\eta d\xi \right)^{\frac{p}{q}} \int_0^\Delta \int_0^\tau e^{-\lambda(\xi + \eta)} |f(\xi, \eta) - g(\xi, \eta)|^p d\eta d\xi \le$$

$$\le \left( \frac{p-1}{\lambda} \right)^{2(p-1)} e^{\lambda(\Delta + \tau)} \rho_{K\Delta\tau}^p (f, g) \le$$

$$\le \left( \frac{p-1}{\lambda} \right)^{2(p-1)} e^{\lambda(x+y)} \rho_{K\Delta\tau}^p (f, g) \quad (\text{cf.}(A3)).$$

If  $(\alpha, \beta) \in \mathbb{R}^2_+$ , then

$$\begin{split} \left| \int_0^\beta (f(\alpha,\eta) - g(\alpha,\eta)) d\eta \right|^p & \leq \\ & \leq \left( \int_0^\beta |f(\alpha,\eta) - g(\alpha,\eta)| d\eta \right)^p = \left( \int_0^\beta e^{\frac{\lambda}{p}(\alpha + \eta - \alpha - \eta)} |f(\alpha,\eta) - g(\alpha,\eta)| d\eta \right)^p \leq \\ & \leq \left( \int_0^\beta e^{\frac{g\lambda}{p}(\alpha + \eta)} d\eta \right)^{\frac{p}{q}} \int_0^\beta e^{-\lambda(\alpha + \eta)} |f(\alpha,\eta) - g(\alpha,\eta)|^p d\eta \leq \\ & \leq \left( \frac{p-1}{\lambda} \right)^{p-1} e^{\lambda(\alpha + \beta)} \int_0^\beta e^{-\lambda(\alpha + \eta)} |f(\alpha,\eta) - g(\alpha,\eta)|^p d\eta \leq \\ & \leq \left( \frac{p-1}{\lambda} \right)^{p-1} e^{\lambda(x+y)} \int_0^\beta e^{-\lambda(\alpha + \eta)} |f(\alpha,\eta) - g(\alpha,\eta)|^p d\eta \quad (\text{cf.}(A3)). \end{split}$$

In the same way (by means of (A3)) we obtain: if  $(\theta, \kappa) \in \mathbb{R}^2_+$ , then

$$\left| \int_0^{\theta} (f(\xi,\kappa) - g(\xi,\kappa)) d\xi \right|^p \leq \left( \frac{p-1}{\lambda} \right)^{p-1} e^{\lambda(x+y)} \int_0^{\theta} e^{-\lambda(\xi+\kappa)} |f(\xi,\kappa) - g(\xi,\kappa)|^p d\xi.$$

Hence

$$\int_K \int e^{-\lambda(|x|+|y|)} |T(f)(x,y) - T(g)(x,y)|^p dx dy \le$$

$$\leq 4^{p-1} \left( \left( \frac{p-1}{\lambda} \right)^{2(p-1)} \rho_{K_{\Delta \tau}}^{p}(f,g) \int_{K_{+}}^{s} \int \omega_{1}^{p}(x,y) dx dy + \right.$$

$$+ \left( \frac{p-1}{\lambda} \right)^{p-1} \int_{K_{+}}^{s} \int \omega_{2}^{p}(y) \int_{0}^{\beta} e^{-\lambda(\alpha+\eta)} |f(\alpha,\eta) - g(\alpha,\eta)|^{p} d\eta dx dy +$$

$$+ \left( \frac{p-1}{\lambda} \right)^{p-1} \int_{K_{+}}^{s} \int \omega_{3}^{p}(x) \int_{0}^{\theta} e^{-\lambda(\xi+\kappa)} |f(\xi,\kappa) - g(\xi,\kappa)|^{p} d\xi dx dy +$$

$$+ \omega_{4}^{p} e^{-\lambda\delta_{0}} \int_{K_{+}}^{s} \int e^{-\lambda(\mu+\nu)} |f(\mu,\nu) - g(\mu,\nu)|^{p} dx dy \right).$$
Denote  $K_{y} = \{y : (x,y) \in K_{+}\}, K_{x} = \{x : (x,y) \in K_{+}\}.$  Consequently
$$\int_{K_{+}}^{s} \int \omega_{2}^{p}(y) \int_{0}^{\beta} e^{-\lambda(\alpha+\eta)} |f(\alpha,\eta) - g(\alpha,\eta)|^{p} d\eta dx dy \leq$$

$$\leq \int_{K_{y}}^{s} \omega_{2}^{p}(v) \int_{K_{\alpha}}^{s} \int_{K_{\beta}}^{s} |\alpha_{u}^{*}(u,v)| e^{-\lambda(u+\eta)} |f(u,\eta) - g(u,\eta)|^{p} d\eta du dv \leq$$

$$\leq ||\alpha_{u}^{*}||_{L^{\infty}(\mathbb{R}^{2}_{+})}^{s} \rho_{K_{\alpha\beta}}^{p}(f,g) \int_{K_{y}}^{s} \omega_{2}^{p}(v) dv$$

and similarly

$$\begin{split} \int_{K_+} \int \omega_3^p(x) \int_0^\theta e^{-\lambda(\xi+\kappa)} |f(\xi,\kappa) - g(\xi,\kappa)|^p d\xi dx dy &\leq \\ &\leq ||\kappa_v^\star||_{L^\infty(\mathbb{R}^2_+)} \rho_{K_{\theta\kappa}}^p(f,g) \int_{K_x} \omega_3^p(u) du. \\ &\int_{K_+} \int e^{-\lambda(\mu+\nu)} |f(\mu,\nu) - g(\mu,\nu)|^p dx dy = \\ &= \int_{K_{\mu\nu}} \int \left| \frac{D(\mu^\star,\nu^\star)}{D(u,v)} \right| e^{-\lambda(u+v)} |f(u,v) - g(u,v)|^p du dv &\leq \\ &\leq \left\| \frac{D(\mu^\star,\nu^\star)}{D(u,v)} \right\|_{L^\infty(\mathbb{R}^2_+)} \rho_{K_{\mu\nu}}^p(f,g). \end{split}$$

Thus we receive the estimate

$$\rho_{K}^{p}(T(f), T(g)) \leq 4^{p-1} \rho_{j(K)}^{p}(f, g) \left( \left( \frac{p-1}{\lambda} \right)^{2p-2} ||\omega_{1}||_{L^{p}(K_{\Delta \tau})}^{p} + \left( \frac{p-1}{\lambda} \right)^{p-1} C_{\alpha} ||\omega_{2}||_{L^{p}(K_{y})}^{p} + \left( \frac{p-1}{\lambda} \right)^{p-1} C_{\kappa} ||\omega_{3}||_{L^{p}(K_{x})}^{p} + \lambda^{-\delta_{0}} C_{\mu\nu} \omega_{4}^{p} \right),$$
where  $C_{\alpha} = ||\alpha_{u}^{*}||_{L^{\infty}(\mathbb{R}_{+}^{2})}, C_{\kappa} = ||\kappa_{v}^{*}||_{L^{\infty}(\mathbb{R}_{+}^{2})}, C_{\mu\nu} = \left\| \frac{D(\mu^{*}, \nu^{*})}{D(u, v)} \right\|_{L^{\infty}(\mathbb{R}_{+}^{2})}.$ 

Define

$$\Phi_K(t) =$$

$$\begin{cases} 0, & K_{+} = \emptyset \\ t \sqrt{\left(\frac{2p-2}{\lambda}\right)^{2p-2} \|\omega_{1}\|_{L^{p}(K_{\Delta\tau})}^{p} + \left(\frac{4p-4}{\lambda}\right)^{p-1} C_{\alpha} \|\omega_{2}\|_{L^{p}(K_{y})}^{p} + \left(\frac{4p-4}{\lambda}\right)^{p-1} C_{\kappa} \|\omega_{3}\|_{L^{p}(K_{x})}^{p} + \frac{(4\omega_{4})^{p}C_{\mu\nu}}{4\lambda^{\delta_{0}}}, \\ K_{+} \neq \emptyset \end{cases}$$

Then  $\rho_K(T(f), T(g)) \leq \Phi_K(\rho_{j(K)}(f, g)) \ \forall \ K \in \mathcal{A}, \ \forall \ f, g \in X.$ 

We can find and fix  $\lambda > 1$  so that

$$\left(\frac{2p-2}{\lambda}\right)^{2p-2} \|\omega_1\|_{L^p(\mathbb{R}^2_+)}^p + \left(\frac{4p-4}{\lambda}\right)^{p-1} C_\alpha \|\omega_2\|_{L^p(\mathbb{R}^1_+)}^p + \\
+ \left(\frac{4p-4}{\lambda}\right)^{p-1} C_\kappa \|\omega_3\|_{L^p(\mathbb{R}^1_+)}^p + \frac{(4\omega_4)^p C_{\mu\nu}}{4\lambda^{\delta_0}} < 1$$

for example

$$\begin{split} \lambda > \max\{2^q(p-1)||\omega_1||_{L^p(\mathbb{R}^1_+)}^{q/2}, 4^q C_\alpha^{q/p}(p-1)||\omega_2||_{L^p(\mathbb{R}^1_+)}^q, \\ 4^q C_\kappa^{q/p}(p-1)||\omega_3||_{L^p(\mathbb{R}^1_+)}^q, C_{\mu\nu}^{1/\delta_0}(4\omega_4)^{p/\delta_0}\}. \end{split}$$

Consequently  $\Phi_K(t) < t$ ,  $\Phi_K(t)/t = const$  and T is a  $\Phi$ -contraction.

 $K_+$  is bounded set  $\Rightarrow \Delta(K_+), \tau(K_+), \alpha(K_+), \kappa(K_+)$  are bounded sets too, so (A1') implies  $\exists C_K = const \geq 0$ :

$$|F(x, y, \varphi_0(\Delta, \tau), \varphi_1(\alpha), \varphi_2(\kappa), 0)| \le a(x, y) + bC_K \in L^p_{loc}(\mathbb{R}^2_+) \text{ (cf.(A1'))}.$$

We choose the element  $f_0 \in X$ :

$$f_0(x,y) = \left\{egin{array}{ll} 0, & ext{a.e. on } \mathbb{R}^2_+ \ & \ arphi(x,y), & (x,y) \in \mathbb{R}^2 \setminus \mathbb{R}^2_+. \end{array}
ight.$$

Then

$$T(f_0) = \begin{cases} F(x, y, \varphi_0(\Delta, \tau), \varphi_1(\alpha), \varphi_2(\kappa), 0), \text{ a.e. on } \mathbb{R}^2_+ \\ \varphi(x, y), (x, y) \in \mathbb{R}^2 \setminus \mathbb{R}^2_+. \end{cases} \Rightarrow T(f_0) \in X$$

and consequently

$$||T(f)||_{L^{p}(K)} \leq ||T(f) - T(f_{0})||_{L^{p}(K)} + ||T(f_{0})||_{L^{p}(K)} \leq$$

$$\leq (\max_{(x,y)\in K} e^{\lambda(|x|+|y|)})^{\frac{1}{p}} \rho_{K}(T(f), T(f_{0})) + ||T(f_{0})||_{L^{p}(K)} \leq$$

$$\leq c(K, \lambda, p)\rho_{j(K)}(f, f_{0}) + ||T(f_{0})||_{L^{p}(K)}, \ \forall \ f \in X.$$



But  $\rho_{j(K)}(f, f_0) \leq ||f||_{L^p(j(K)\cap \mathbb{R}^2)} \Rightarrow T(f) \in X$ .

Besides the estimates  $\rho_{j^l(K)}(f_0, T(f_0)) \leq \rho_{\widehat{K}}(f_0, T(f_0))$ ,  $\rho_{j^l(K)}(f, g) \leq \rho_{\widehat{K}}(f, g)$  for any integer  $l \geq 0$ ,  $\forall f, g \in X$  (cf. (A5)) show that conditions 3 of theorem 1 and 4 of theorem 2 are fulfilled. Using once again (A5), we check that condition 2 of theorem 1 is also fulfilled, which completes the proof of theorem 4.

Acknowledgement. The author thanks Prof. V. Angelov for his very useful suggestions.

## References

- [1] Pisarenko, V.G., Problems in the relativistic dynamic of many bodies and nonlinear fields theory, Naukova dumka, Kiev, 1974 (in Russian).
- [2] Myshkis, A.D., Linear differential equations with retarded argument, Nauka, Moscow, 1972 (in Russian).
- [3] Angelov, V.G., Fixed point theorem in uniform spaces and applications, Czechoslovak Math. Journal, 37(112), 1987, Praha, 19-33.
- [4] Rus, I.A., Metrical fixed point theorems, Babes-Bolyai University, 1979.
- [5] Elsgoltz, L.E., Norkin, S.B., Introduction in the theory of differential equations with deviating argument, Nauka, Moscow, 1971 (in Russian).
- [6] Kisielevicz, M., Grytczuk, K., The existence of solutions of hereditary systems of hyperbolic type, Demonstratio Mathematica, v.9, No.4, 1976, 545-561.
- [7] Kamont, Z., Kwapisz, M., On nonlinear Voltera integral-functional equations in several variables, University of Gdanski, Preprint No.11, 1978.
- [8] Agarwal, R.P., Thandapani, E., On the uniqueness of solutions of hyperbolic delay differential equations, Math. Seminar Notes v.6, 1978, 531-536.

University of Mining and Geology "St.I. Rilski" Department of Mathematics, 1100 Sofia, Bulgaria

# GLOBAL EXISTENCE AND ESTIMATES FOR SOLUTIONS OF CERTAIN HIGHER ORDER DIFFERENTIAL EQUATIONS

#### **B.G. PACHPATTE**

Abstract. In this paper results on the global existence and estimates for solutions of general higher order differential equations are established. The main tools employed in our analysis are based on the applications of the Leray-Schauder alternative and certain integral inequalities which provide explicit bounds on the unknown functions.

#### 1. Introduction

Let  $r_i(t) > 0$ , i = 1, 2, ..., n-1 and x(t) be sufficiently smooth functions on  $l = [t_0, T]$ ,  $t_0 \ge 0$ , T > 0. Then for x(t) the r-derivatives are defined as follows

$$D_r^{(0)}x = x,$$

$$D_r^{(k)}x = r_k(D_r^{(k-1)}x)', \quad k = 1, 2, \dots, n-1, \quad \left( ' = \frac{d}{dt} = D \right),$$

$$D_r^{(n)}x = (D_r^{(n-1)}x)'.$$

In this paper we consider the n-th order (n > 1) differential equation of the form

(P) 
$$D_r^{(n)}y = f(t, D_r^{(0)}y, D_r^{(1)}y, \dots, D_r^{(n-1)}y),$$

with the given initial conditions

$$(P_0) D_r^{(m)} y(t_0) = c_m, m = 0, 1, 2, \dots, n-1,$$

where  $f: I \times \mathbb{R}^n \to \mathbb{R}$  is a continuous function, R denotes the set of real numbers and  $c_m$  are given real constants. We define  $B = C^{n-1}(I) = C^{n-1}(I, R)$  to be the Banach

space of functions u such that  $D_r^{(n-1)}u$  is continuous on I endowed with norm

$$||u|| = \max\{|D_r^{(0)}u|_0, |D_r^{(1)}u|_0, \dots, |D_r^{(n-1)}u|_0\},$$

where  $|u|_0 = \max\{|u(t)|: t \in I\}$ . In the past two decades there has been a great deal of interest in the study of oscillatory and asymptotic behavior of the solutions of equations of the form (P) and its various special versions. We choose to refer here the papers by Fink and Kusano [3], Kusano and Trench [4], Pachpatte [7,8], Philos [14,15], Philos and Staikos [16] and Trench [17,18] and the references given therein.

As noted by Kusano and Trench [4,p.381], it seems that very little is known about the global existence and various other properties of the solutions of such equations in the literature. The main purpose of this paper is to establish some results concerning the global existence and estimates for solutions of  $(P_0)$  which in turn contains in the special cases a number of higher order differential equations studied by many authors by using different techniques. The main tools employed in our analysis are based on the applications of the Leray-Schauder alternative and certain integral inequalities which provide explicit bounds on the unknown functions.

## 2. Global existence of solutions

In order to obtain our result on the global existence of solutions of  $(P) - (P_0)$ , we need the following theorem, which is a version of the topological transversality theorem given by A. Granas in [2,p.61].

**Theorem G.** Let B be a convex subset of a normed linear space E and assume  $0 \in B$ . Let  $F: B \to B$  be a completely continuous operator and let

$$U(F) = \{x \in B : x = \lambda Fx \text{ for some } 0 < \lambda < 1\}.$$

Then either U(F) is unbounded or F has a fixed point.

For our purposes, for any integers m and k with  $0 \le m \le k \le n-1$ , we introduce the function  $R_{mk}$  which is defined on I by

$$R_{mk}(t) = \begin{cases} 1, & \text{if } m = k, \\ \int_{t_0}^{t = -m} \frac{1}{r_{m+1}(s_{m+1})} \int_{t_0}^{s_{m+1}} \frac{1}{r_{m+2}(s_{m+2})} \dots x \\ x \int_{t_0}^{s_{k-1}} \frac{1}{r_k(x_k)} ds_k \dots ds_{m+2} ds_{m+1}, & \text{if } m < k. \end{cases}$$
 (2.1)

In particular, for any integer k with  $0 \le k \le n-1$ , we put

$$R_k(t) = R_{0k}(t), \quad t \ge t_0.$$

The following theorem constitute the main result of this section.

**Theorem 1.** Suppose that there exists a function  $a \in C(I, R_+)$ ,  $R_+ = [0, \infty)$  such that

$$|f(t, D_r^{(0)}y, D_r^{(1)}y, \dots, D_r^{(n-1)}y)| \le a(t)H\left(\sum_{m=0}^{n-1}|D_r^{(m)}y|\right),$$
 (2.2)

where  $H: R_+ \to (0, \infty)$  is a continuous nondecreasing function. Then the problem  $(P) - (P_0)$  has a solution y in B provided that T satisfies

$$int_{t_0}^T M(s)ds < \int_c^\infty \frac{ds}{H(s)},$$
 (2.3)

where

$$c = \sum_{m=0}^{n-1} \left[ |c_m| + \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} |c_k| R_{mk}(T) \right], \tag{2.4}$$

in which  $R_{mk}(T)$  is defined by taking t = T in (2.1) and

$$M(t) = \sum_{m=0}^{n-1} \frac{1}{r_{m+1}(t)} \int_{t_0}^t \frac{1}{r_{m+2}(s_{m+2})} \int_{t_0}^{s_{m+2}} \frac{1}{r_{m+3}(s_{m+3})} \cdots \times$$
 (2.5)

$$\times \int_{t_0}^{s_{n-2}} \frac{1}{r_{n-1}(s_{n-1})} \int_{t_0}^{s_{n-1}} a(s) ds ds_{n-1} \cdots \times ds_{m+3} ds_{m+2},$$

for  $t \in I$ .

**Proof.** First we establish the a-priori bounds for the problem  $(P)_{\lambda}$  –  $(P_0)$ ,  $\lambda \in (0,1)$ , where

$$(P)_{\lambda} \qquad \qquad D_r^{(n)} y = \lambda f(t, D_r^{(0)} y, D_r^{(1)} y, \dots, D_r^{(n-1)} y).$$

Let y(t) be a solution of  $(P)_{\lambda} - (P_0)$ . Then y(t) and its derivatives can be written as

$$D_r^{(m)}y(t) = c_m + \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} c_k R_{mk}(t) + \lambda \int_{t_0}^t \frac{1}{r_{m+1}(s_{m+1})} \times$$
 (2.6)

$$\times \int_{t_0}^{s_{m+1}} \frac{1}{r_{m+2}(s_{m+2})} \cdots \int_{t_0}^{s_{n-2}} \frac{1}{r_{n-1}(s_{n-1})} \int_{t_0}^{s_{n-1}} \overline{f}(y(s)) ds ds_{n-1} \dots ds_{m+2} ds_{m+1},$$
for  $0 < m < n-1$ , where

$$\overline{f}(y(t)) = f(t, D_r^{(0)}y(t), D_r^{(1)}y(t), \dots, D_r^{(n-1)}y(t)), \tag{2.7}$$

and  $R_{mk}(t)$  is defined by (2.1). From (2.6) and using the condition (2.2) we have

$$\sum_{m=0}^{n-1} |D_r^{(m)} y(t)| \le c + \sum_{m=0}^{n-1} \int_{t_0}^t \frac{1}{r_{m+1}(s_{m+1})} \int_{t_0}^{s_{m+1}} \frac{1}{r_{m+2}(s_{m+2})} \times \tag{2.8}$$

$$\times \cdots \int_{t_0}^{s_{n-2}} \frac{1}{r_{n-1}(s_{n-1})} \int_{t_0}^{s_{n-1}} a(s) \times H\left(\sum_{m=0}^{n-1} |D_r^{(m)}y(s)|\right) ds ds_{n-1} \dots ds_{m+2} ds_{m+1},$$

where c is defined by (2.4). Define a function u(t) by the right side of (2.8). Then

$$\sum_{m=0}^{n-1} |D_r^{(m)} y(t)| \le u(t), \quad u(t_0) = c,$$

and

$$u'(t) \le \sum_{m=0}^{n-1} \frac{1}{r_{m+1}(t)} \int_{t_0}^t \frac{1}{r_{m+2}(s_{m+2})} \int_{t_0}^{s_{m+2}} \frac{1}{r_{m+3}(s_{m+3})} \times \tag{2.9}$$

$$\times \cdots \int_{t_0}^{s_{n-2}} \frac{1}{r_{n-1}(s_{n-1})} \int_{t_0}^{s_{n-1}} a(s) H(u(s)) ds ds_{n-1} \times ds_{m+3} ds_{m+2} \leq M(t) H(u(t)),$$

for  $t \in I$ . From (2.9) it follows that

$$\frac{u'(t)}{H(u(t))} \le M(t). \tag{2.10}$$

The integration of (2.10) from  $t_0$  to t and the use of the change of variable and the condition (2.3) give

$$\int_{c}^{u(t)} \frac{ds}{H(s)} = \int_{t_0}^{t} \frac{u'(s)}{H(u(s))} ds \le \int_{t_0}^{t} M(s) ds \le \int_{t_0}^{T} M(s) ds < \int_{c}^{\infty} \frac{ds}{H(s)}.$$
 (2.11)

From (2.11) it follows that u(t) must be bounded on I, i.e. there is a positive constant  $\alpha$  independent of  $\lambda \in (0,1)$  such that  $u(t) \leq \alpha$  and hence  $\sum_{m=0}^{n-1} |D_r^{(m)} y(t)| \leq \alpha$  for  $t \in I$ . Thus we have  $|D_r^{(m)} y(t)| \leq \alpha$ ,  $t \in I$  for  $0 \leq m \leq n-1$ , and consequently  $||y|| \leq \alpha$ .

In the next step we rewrite the problem  $(P)-(P_0)$  as follows. If y(t)=z(t)+e(t), where  $e(t)=c_0+\sum_{k=1}^{n-1}c_kR_k(t)$ ,  $t\in I$ , then it is easy to see that  $z(t_0)=y(t_0)-e(t_0)=0$ ,

$$z(t) = \int_{t_0}^{t} \frac{1}{r_1(s_1)} \int_{t_0}^{s_1} \frac{1}{r_2(s_2)} \times \int_{t_0}^{s_{n-2}} \frac{1}{r_{n-1}(s_{n-1})} \times$$

$$\times \int_{t_0}^{s_{n-1}} f^*(z(s) + e(s)) ds ds_{n-1} \dots ds_2 ds_1,$$
(2.12)

if and only if y(t) satisfies  $(P) - (P_0)$ , where we have used the notation  $f^*(z(s) + e(s))$  for

$$f(s, D_r^{(0)}(z(s) + e(s)), D_r^{(1)}(z(s) + e(s)), \dots, D_r^{(0)}(z(s) + e(s))).$$
Define  $F: B_0 \to B_0, \ B_0 = \{z \in B: \ z(t_0) = 0\}$  by
$$Fz(t) = \int_{t_0}^t \frac{1}{r_1(s_1)} \int_{t_0}^{s_1} \frac{1}{r_2(s_2)} \cdots \int_{t_0}^{s_{n-2}} \frac{1}{r_{n-1}(s_{n-1})} \times \int_{t_0}^{s_{n-1}} f^*(z(s) + e(s)) ds ds_{n-1} \dots ds_2 ds_1,$$

$$(2.13)$$

for  $t \in I$ . Then F is clearly continuous. Now we shall prove that F is completely continuous.

Let  $\{w_k\}$  be a bounded sequence in  $B_0$ , i.e.  $||w_k|| \leq \beta$  for all k, where  $\beta$  is a positive constant. From (2.13) and using condition (2.2) and setting  $M^* = \sup\{M(t): t \in I\}$  and  $e^* = \sup\{|D_r^{(m)}e(t)|: t \in I, 0 \leq m \leq n-1\}$ , we have

$$|D_r^{(m)}(Fw_k(t))| \le \int_{t_0}^t \frac{1}{r_{m+1}(s_{m+1})} \int_{t_0}^{s_{m+1}} \frac{1}{r_{m+2}(s_{m+2})} \cdots \times \tag{2.14}$$

$$\times \int_{t_0}^{s_{n-2}} \frac{1}{r_{n-1}(s_{n-1})} \int_{t_0}^{s_{n-1}} |f^*(w_k(s) + e(s))| ds ds_{n-1} \dots ds_{m+2} ds_{m+1} \le$$

$$\leq M^* (H(n(\beta + e^*))(T - t_0) = L,$$

for  $0 \le m \le n-1$ , where  $L \ge 0$  is a constant. Hence from (2.14) we obtain  $||Fw_k|| \le L$ . This means that  $\{Fw_k\}$  is uniformly bounded.

Now we shall that the sequence  $\{Fw_k\}$  is equicontinuous. Let  $t_0 \leq t_1 \leq t_2 \leq T$ . Then from (2.13) and using the condition (2.2), and letting  $\{w_k\}$ ,  $M^*$ ,  $e^*$  as defined above, we observe that

$$|D_{r}^{(m)}(Fw_{k}(t_{2})) - D_{r}^{(m)}(Fw_{k}(t_{1}))| \leq$$

$$\leq \int_{t_{1}}^{t_{2}} \frac{1}{r_{m+1}(s_{m+1})} \int_{t_{0}}^{s_{m+1}} \frac{1}{r_{m+2}(s_{m+2})} \cdots \int_{t_{0}}^{s_{n-2}} \frac{1}{r_{n-1}(s_{n-1})} \times$$

$$\times \int_{t_{0}}^{s_{n-1}} |f^{*}(w_{k}(s) + e(s))| ds ds_{n-1} \dots ds_{m+2} ds_{m+1} \leq$$

$$\leq \int_{t_{1}}^{t_{2}} \frac{1}{r_{m+1}(s_{m+1})} \int_{t_{0}}^{s_{m+1}} \frac{1}{r_{m+2}(s_{m+2})} \cdots \int_{t_{0}}^{s_{n-2}} \frac{1}{r_{n-1}(s_{n-1})} \times$$

$$\times \int_{t_{0}}^{s_{n-1}} a(s) H\left(\sum_{m=0}^{n-1} [|D_{r}^{(m)}w_{k}(s)| + |D_{r}^{(m)}e(s)|]\right) ds ds_{n-1} \dots ds_{m+2} ds_{m+1} \leq$$

$$\leq \int_{t_{1}}^{t_{2}} \frac{1}{r_{m+1}(s_{m+1})} \int_{t_{0}}^{s_{m+1}} \frac{1}{r_{m+2}(s_{m+2})} \cdots \int_{t_{0}}^{s_{n-2}} \frac{1}{r_{n-1}(s_{n-1})} \times$$

$$\times \int_{t_{0}}^{s_{n-1}} M^{*} H(n(\beta + e^{*})) ds ds_{n-1} \dots ds_{m+2} ds_{m+1} \leq \int_{t_{1}}^{t_{2}} M^{*} H(n(\beta + e^{*})) ds.$$

From (2.15) we conclude that  $\{Fw_k\}$  is equicontinuous and hence by Arzela-Ascoli theorem the operator F is completely continuous.

Moreover, the set  $U(F) = \{z \in B_0 : z = \lambda Fz, \ \lambda \in (0,1)\}$  is bounded. Since for every z in U(F) the function y(t) = z(t) + e(t) is a solution of  $(P)_{\lambda} - (P_0)$ , for which we have proved that  $||y|| \le \alpha$  and hence  $||z|| \le \alpha_e^*$ . By applying Theorem G, the operator F has a fixed point in  $B_0$ . This means that the problem  $(P) - (P_0)$  has a solution y(t) in B. The proof is complete.

Remark 1. We note that our Theorem 1 extends the well known theorem of Wintner [20] on the global existence of solution of Cauchy problem for first order differential equation, to higher order differential equations  $(P)-(P_0)$ . For some recent

extensions of Wintmer's theorem, see [1,5-10,12,13]. Further we note that out Theorem 1 contains in the special cases the global existence of solutions of the following differential equations

$$(P_1) \quad (r(t)y^{(n-1)}(t))' = f(t, r(t)y(t), r(t)y'(t), r(t)y''(t), \dots, r(t)y^{(n-1)}(t)),$$

$$(P_2) \quad (r(t)y'(t))^{(n-1)} = f(t,y(t),r(t)y'(t),(r(t)y'(t))',\ldots,(r(t)y'(t))^{(n-2)}),$$

$$(P_3) \quad y^{(n)}(t) = f(t, y(t), y'(t), \dots, y^{(n-1)}(t)),$$

with some suitable given initial conditions, and studied by many authors in the literature with different viewpoints, see [3,4,14-19].

#### 3. Estimates on the solutions

In this section we obtain estimates on the solutions of  $(P) - (P_0)$  which can be used to study the various properties of the solutions of equations  $(P) - (P_0)$ , by using the integral inequalities given in [11, Theorem 3.3.1, p.222 and Theorem 1.3.2, p.13].

The following theorem deals with the estimates on the solution and their derivatives of the problem  $(P) - (P_0)$ .

**Theorem 2.** Suppose that the function f in (P) satisfies

$$|f(t, D_r^{(0)}y, D_r^{(1)}y, \dots, D_r^{(n-1)}y| \le L\left(t, \sum_{m=0}^{n-1} |D_r^{(m)}y|\right),$$
 (3.1)

for  $t \in I$ , where  $L: I \times R_+ \to R_+$  be a continuous function such that

$$(L) \qquad \qquad 0 \leq L(t,u) - L(t,v) \leq w(t,v)(u-v),$$

for  $t \in I$  and  $u \ge v \ge 0$ , where  $w : I \times R_+ \to R_+$  is a continuous function. If y(t) is a solution of  $(P) - (P_0)$  on I, then

$$\sum_{m=0}^{n-1} |D_r^{(m)} y(t)| \le a(t) + b(t) \int_{t_0}^t L(s, a(s)) \exp\left(\int_s^t w(\sigma, a(\sigma)) b(\sigma) d\sigma\right) ds, \quad (3.2)$$

where

$$u(t) = \sum_{m=0}^{n-1} \left[ |c_m| + \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} |c_k R_{mk}(t)| \right], \tag{3.3}$$

$$b(t) = \sum_{m=0}^{n-1} \int_{t_0}^{t} \frac{1}{r_{m+1}(s_{m+1})} \int_{t_0}^{s_{m+1}} \frac{1}{r_{m+2}(s_{m+2})} \cdots \int_{t_0}^{s_{n-2}} \frac{1}{r_{n-1}(s_{n-1})} \times ds_{n-1} \cdots ds_{m+2} ds_{m+1},$$
(3.4)

for  $t \in I$  and  $R_{mk}(t)$  is defined by (2.1).

**Proof.** If y(t) is a solution of  $(P) - (P_0)$ , then y(t) and its derivatives can be written as

$$D_r^{(m)}y(t) = c_m + \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} c_k R_{mk}(t) + \int_{t_0}^t \frac{1}{r_{m+1}(s_{m+1})} \times$$
 (3.5)

$$\times \int_{t_0}^{s_{m+1}} \frac{1}{r_{m+2}(s_{m+2})} \cdots \int_{t_0}^{s_{n-2}} \frac{1}{r_{n-1}(s_{n-1})} \int_{t_0}^{s_{n-1}} \overline{f}(y(s)) ds ds_{n-1} \dots ds_{m+2} ds_{m+1},$$

for  $0 \le m \le n-1$ , where  $R_{mk}(t)$  and  $\overline{f}(y(t))$  are defined by (2.1) and (2.7) respectively. From (3.5), (3.1), (3.3) and (3.4) we observe that

$$\sum_{m=0}^{n-1} |D_r^{(m)} y(t)| \le a(t) + b(t) \int_{t_0}^t L\left(s, \sum_{m=0}^{n-1} |D_r^{(m)} y(s)|\right) ds. \tag{3.6}$$

Now an application of Theorem 3.2.1 given in [11,p.222] to (3.6) yields the desired inequality in (3.2). The proof is complete.

Our next theorem deals with a slight variant of Theorem 2 which can be used more conveniently in certain applications.

**Theorem 3.** Suppose that the function f in (P) satisfies the condition (3.1). If y(t) is a solution of  $(P) - (P_0)$  existing on I, then

$$\sum_{m=0}^{n-1} |D_r^{(m)} y(t) - \psi^{(m)}(t)| \le \tag{3.7}$$

$$\leq q(t) + b(t) \left( \int_{t_0}^t q(s) w \left( s, \sum_{m=0}^{n-1} |\psi^{(m)}(s)| \right) \exp \left( \int_s^t b(\sigma) w \left( \sigma, \sum_{m=0}^{n-1} |\psi^{(m)}(\sigma) \right) d\sigma \right) ds \right),$$
for  $t \in I$ , where

$$\psi^{(m)}(t) = c_m + \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} c_k R_{mk}(t), \tag{3.8}$$

$$q(t) = b(t) \int_{t_0}^{t} L\left(s, \sum_{m=0}^{n-1} |\psi^{(m)}(s)|\right) ds, \tag{3.9}$$

for  $t \in I$ ,  $R_{mk}(t)$  and b(t) are defined by (2.1) and (3.4) respectively.

**Proof.** If y(t) is a solution of  $(P) - (P_0)$ , then y(t) and its derivatives can be written as

$$D_r^{(m)}y(t) = \psi^{(m)}(t) + \int_{t_0}^t \frac{1}{r_{m+1}(s_{m+1})} \int_{t_0}^{s_{m+1}} \frac{1}{r_{m+2}(s_{m+2})} \cdots \times$$

$$\times \int_{t_0}^{s_{n-2}} \frac{1}{r_{n-1}(s_{n-1})} \int_{t_0}^{s_{n-1}} \overline{f}(y(s)) ds ds_{n-1} \dots ds_{m+2} ds_{m+1},$$
(3.10)

where  $\overline{f}(y(t))$  is defined by (2.7). From (3.10), (3.1), (3.9), and the condition (L) we observe that

$$\sum_{m=0}^{n-1} |D_{r}^{(m)}y(t) - \psi^{(m)}(t)| \leq \sum_{m=0}^{n-1} \frac{1}{r_{m+1}(s_{m+1})} \int_{t_{0}}^{s_{m+1}} \frac{1}{r_{m+2}(s_{m+2})} \cdots \times$$

$$\times \int_{t_{0}}^{s_{n-2}} \frac{1}{r_{n-1}(s_{n-1})} \int_{t_{0}}^{s_{n-1}} |\overline{f}(y(s)) ds ds_{n-1} \dots ds_{m+2} ds_{m+1} \leq$$

$$\leq b(t) \int_{t_{0}}^{t} L\left(s, \sum_{m=0}^{n-1} |D_{r}^{(m)}y(s)|\right) ds \leq$$

$$\leq b(t) \int_{t_{0}}^{t} \left[L\left(s, \sum_{m=0}^{n-1} |D_{r}^{(m)}y(s) - \psi^{(m)}(s)| + \sum_{m=0}^{n-1} |\psi^{(m)}(s)|\right) -$$

$$-L\left(s, \sum_{m=0}^{n-1} |\psi^{(m)}(s)|\right) + L\left(s, \sum_{m=0}^{n-1} |\psi^{(m)}(s)|\right) \right] ds \leq$$

$$\leq q(t) + b(t) \int_{t_{0}}^{t} w\left(s, \sum_{m=0}^{n-1} |\psi^{(m)}(s)|\right) \sum_{m=0}^{n-1} |D_{r}^{(m)}y(s) - \psi^{(m)}(s)| x ds.$$

Now an application of Theorem 1.3.2 given in [11,p.13] yields the required inequality in (3.7). The proof is complete.

Another useful variant of Theorem 2 which deals with the bounds on the solution y(t) of  $(P) - (P_0)$  and its derivatives is given in the following theorem.

**Theorem 4.** Suppose that the function f in (P) satisfies the condition

$$|f(t, D_r^{(0)}y, D_r^{(1)}y, \dots, D_r^{(n-1)}y)| \le h(t) \left(\sum_{m=0}^{n-1} |D_r^{(m)}y|\right),$$
 (3.12)

for  $t \in I$ , where  $h: I \to R_+$  is a continuous function. If y(t) is a solution of  $(P) - (P_0)$ , then

$$\sum_{m=0}^{n-1} |D_r^{(m)} y(t)| \le a(t) + b(t) \int_{t_0}^t h(s) a(s) \exp\left(\int_s^t h(\sigma) b(\sigma) d\sigma\right) ds, \tag{3.13}$$

for  $t \in I$ , where a(t) and b(t) are defined by (3.3) and (3.4) respectively.

**Proof.** Let y(t) be a solution of  $(P) - (P_0)$  for  $t \in I$ , then the solution y(t) and its derivatives can be written as in (3.5). From (3.5), (3.12), (3.3) and (3.4) we have

$$\sum_{m=0}^{n-1} |D_r^{(m)} y(t)| \le a(t) + b(t) \int_{t_0}^t h(s) \left( \sum_{m=0}^{n-1} |D_r^{(m)} y(s)| \right) ds.$$
 (3.14)

Now an application of Theorem 1.3.2 given in [11,p.13] yields the desired bound in (3.13). The proof is complete.

Our next result deals with the dependency of solutions of equations (P) on initial values.

**Theorem 5.** Let  $y_1(y)$  and  $y_2(t)$  be the solutions of  $(P) - (P_0)$  with the given initial conditions

$$D_r^{(m)} y_1(t_0) = c_m, (3.15)$$

and

$$D_r^{(m)} y_2(t_0) = d_m, (3.16)$$

respectively, for m = 0, 1, 2, ..., n-1, where  $c_m, d_m$  are given real constants. Suppose that the function f in (P) satisfies the condition

$$|f(t, D_r^{(0)}y_1, D_r^{(1)}y_1, \dots, D_r^{(n-1)}y_1) - f(t, D_r^{(0)}y_2, D_r^{(1)}y_2, \dots, D_r^{(n-1)}y_2)| \le (3.17)$$

$$\leq h(t) \left( \sum_{m=0}^{n-1} |D_r^{(m)} y_1 - D_r^{(m)} y_2| \right),$$

for  $t \in I$ , where  $h: I \to R_+$  is a continuous function. Then

$$\sum_{m=0}^{n-1} |D_r^{(m)} y_1(t) - D_r^{(m)} y_2(t)| \le$$
(3.18)

$$\leq A(t) + b(t) \int_{t_0}^t h(s) A(s) \exp\left(\int_s^t h(\sigma) b(\sigma) d\sigma\right) ds,$$

where

$$A(t) = \sum_{m=0}^{n-1} \left[ |c_m - d_m| + \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} |c_k - d_k| R_{mk}(t) \right], \tag{3.19}$$

for  $t \in I$ ,  $R_{mk}(t)$  and b(t) are defined by (2.1) and (3.4) respectively.

**Proof.** In view of the facts that  $y_1(t)$  and  $y_2(t)$  are the solutions of (P) with the given initial conditions (3.15) and (3.16) respectively, we have

$$D_{r}^{(m)}y_{1}(t) - D_{r}^{(m)}y_{2}(t) = (c_{m} - d_{m}) + \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} (c_{k} - d_{k})R_{mk}(t) +$$

$$+ \int_{t_{0}}^{t} \frac{1}{r_{m+1}(s_{m+1})} \int_{t_{0}}^{s_{m+1}} \frac{1}{r_{m+2}(s_{m+2})} \cdots \int_{t_{0}}^{s_{n-2}} \frac{1}{r_{n-1}(s_{n-1})} \times$$

$$\times \int_{s_{m+1}}^{s_{m-1}} (\overline{f}(y_{1}(s)) - \overline{f}(y_{2}(s))) ds ds_{n-1} \dots ds_{m+2} ds_{m+1},$$

$$(3.20)$$

where  $R_{mk}(t)$  and  $\overline{f}(y(t))$  are defined by (2.1) and (2.7) respectively. From (3.20), (3.17), (3.19) and (3.4) we observe that

$$\sum_{m=0}^{n-1} |D_r^{(m)} y_1(t) - D_r^{(m)} y_2(t)| \le \tag{3.21}$$

$$\leq A(t) + b(t) \int_{t_0}^t h(s) \left( \sum_{m=0}^{n-1} |D_r^{(m)} y_1(s) - D_r^{(m)} y_2(s)| \right) ds.$$

Now an application of Theorem 1.3.2 given in [11,p.13] yields the required inequality in (3.18) and hence the proof is complete.

We next consider the following differential equations

$$(Q_1) D_r^{(n)} y = f(t, D_r^{(0)} y, D_r^{(1)} y, \dots, D_r^{(n-1)} y, \mu),$$

$$(Q_2) D_r^{(n)} y = f(t, D_r^{(0)} y, D_r^{(1)} y, \dots, D_r^{(n-1)} y, \mu_0),$$

with the given initial conditions in  $(P_0)$ , where  $f: I \times R^n \times R \to R$  is a continuous function and  $\mu, \mu_0$  are real parameters.

The following theorem shows the dependency of solutions of equations  $(Q_1)$  –  $(P_0)$  and  $(Q_2)$  –  $(P_0)$  on pure parameters.

Theorem 6. Suppose that

$$|f(t, D_r^{(0)}y, D_r^{(1)}y, \dots, D_r^{(n-1)}y, \mu - f(t, D_r^{(0)}\overline{y}, D_r^{(1)}\overline{y}, \dots, D_r^{(n-1)}\overline{y}, \mu)| \le (3.22)$$

$$\leq h(t) \left( \sum_{m=0}^{n-1} |D_r^{(m)} y - D_r^{(m)} \overline{y}| \right),$$

$$|f(t, D_r^{(0)}y, D_r^{(1)}y, \dots, D_r^{(n-1)}y, \mu)| -$$
 (3.23)

$$-f(t, D_r^{(0)}y, D_r^{(1)}y, \dots, D_r^{(n-1)}y, \mu_0)| \le g(t)|\mu - \mu_0|.$$

where  $h,g:I\to R_+$  are continuous functions. If  $y_1(t)$  and  $y_2(t)$  are solutions of  $(Q_1) - (P_0)$  and  $(Q_2) - (P_0)$ , then

$$\sum_{m=0}^{n-1} |D_r^{(m)} y_1(t) - D_r^{(m)} y_2(t)| \le$$
(3.24)

$$\leq \overline{A}(t) + b(t) \int_{t_0}^t h(s)\overline{A}(s) \exp\left(\int_s^t h(\sigma)b(\sigma)d\sigma\right) ds,$$

for  $t \in I$ , where

$$\overline{A}(t) = |\mu - \mu_0|b(t) \int_{t_0}^t g(s)ds,$$
 (3.25)

for  $t \in I$  and b(t) is defined by (3.4).

**Proof.** Let  $z(t) = y_1(t) - y_2(t)$  for  $t \in I$ . As in the proof of Theorem 5, from the hypothesis we observe that

$$D_{r}^{(m)}z(t) = D_{r}^{(m)}y_{1}(t) - D_{r}^{(m)}y_{2}(t) =$$

$$= \int_{t_{0}}^{t} \frac{1}{r_{m+1}(s_{m+1})} \int_{t_{0}}^{s_{m+1}} \frac{1}{r_{m+2}(s_{m+2})} \cdots \int_{t_{0}}^{s_{n-2}} \frac{1}{r_{n-1}(s_{n-1})} \times$$

$$\times \int_{t_{0}}^{s_{n-1}} \{f(s, D_{r}^{(0)}y_{1}(s), D_{r}^{(1)}y_{1}(s), \dots, D_{r}^{(n-1)}y_{1}(s), \mu) -$$

$$-f(s, D_{r}^{(0)}y_{2}(s), D_{r}^{(1)}y_{2}(s), \dots, D_{r}^{(n-1)}y_{2}(s), \mu) +$$

$$+f(s, D_{r}^{(0)}y_{2}(s), D_{r}^{(1)}y_{2}(s), \dots, D_{r}^{(n-1)}y_{2}(s), \mu) -$$

$$-f(s, D_{r}^{(0)}y_{2}(s), D_{r}^{(1)}y_{2}(s), \dots, D_{r}^{(n-1)}y_{2}(s), \mu_{0}) \} ds ds_{n-1} \dots ds_{m+2} ds_{m+1}.$$

$$(3.26)$$

From (3.26), (3.22), (3.23), (3.25) and (3.4) we observe that

$$\sum_{m=0}^{n-1} |D_r^{(m)} z(t)| \le \int_{t_0}^t \frac{1}{r_{m+1}(s_{m+1})} \int_{t_0}^{s_{m+1}} \frac{1}{r_{m+2}(s_{m+2})} \cdots \times$$

$$\times \int_{t_0}^{s_{n-2}} \frac{1}{r_{n-1}(s_{n-1})} \int_{t_0}^{s_{n-1}} \left\{ h(s) \left( \sum_{m=0}^{n-1} |D_r^{(m)} y_1(s) - D_r^{(m)} y_2(s)| \right) + \right.$$

$$\left. + g(s) |\mu - \mu_0| \right\} ds ds_{n-1} \dots ds_{m+2} ds_{m+1} \le$$

$$\le b(t) \int_{t_0}^t \left\{ h(s) \left( \sum_{m=0}^{n-1} |D_r^{(m)} z(s)| \right) + g(s) |\mu - \mu_0| \right\} ds =$$

$$= \overline{A}(t) + b(t) \int_{t_0}^t h(s) \left( \sum_{m=0}^{n-1} |D_r^{(m)} z(s)| \right) ds$$

$$(3.27)$$

Now an application of Theorem 1.3.2 given in [11,p.13] yields the required inequality in (3.24) and the proof is complete.

Remark 2. We note that the results obtained in this paper can be very easily extended to the more general integrodifferential equation of the form

$$(Q) D_r^{(n)} y = f(t, D_r^{(0)} y, D_r^{(1)} y, \dots, D_r^{(n-1)} y,$$

$$\int_{t_0}^t g(t, s, D_r^{(0)} y(s), D_r^{(1)} y(s), \dots, D_r^{(n-1)} y(s)) ds),$$

with the given initial conditions in  $(P_0)$ , under some suitable conditions on the functions involved in (Q) and by using the suitable general versions of the inequalities given in Chapters 1 and 3 in [11]. For similar results, see references [7-10,12,13].

#### References

- [1] L.E. Bobisud and D. O'Regan, Existence of solutions to some singular initial value problems, J. Math. Anal. Appl. 133(1988), 214-230.
- [2] J. Digundji and A. Granas, Fixed point theory, Vol.1, Monografic Math., PWN, Warszwa, 1982.
- [3] A.M. Fink and T. Kusano, Nonoscillation theorems for a class of perturbed disconjugate differential equations, Japan J. Math. 9(1983), 277-291.
- [4] T. Kusano and W.F. Trenchm Existence of global solutions with perturbed asymptotic behavior for nonlinear ordinary differential equations, Ann. di. Math. Pura Appl. CXLII(1985), 381-392.
- [5] J.W. Lee and D. O'Regan, Existence results for differential delay equations I, J. Differential Equations 102(1993), 342-359.
- [6] S.K. Natouyas, Y.G. Sficas and P.Ch. Tsamatos, Existence results for initial value problems for neutral functional differential equations, J. Differential Equations 114(1994), 527-537.

- [7] B.G. Pachpatte, On certain nonlinear higher order differential equations, Chinese J. Math. 16(1988), 41-54.
- [8] B.G. Pachpatte, On a class of nonlinear higher order differential equations, Indian J. Pure Appl. Math. 20(1989), 121-128.
- [9] B.G. Pachpatte, Global existence of solutions of certain higher differential equations, Tawanese J. Math. 1(1997), 135-142.
- [10] B.G. Pachpatte, On Wintner type global existence theorems for certain integrodifferential equations, Ann. Differential Eqs. 12(1996), 381-386.
- [11] B.G. Pachpatte, Inequalities for Differential and Integral Equations, Academic Press, New York and London, 1998.
- [12] Deepak B. Pachpatte, Existence theorems for some integrodifferential equations, Libertas Mathematica 15(1995), 189-202.
- [13] Deepak B. Pachpatte and B.G. Pachpatte, Existence of global solutions for some higher order differential and integrodifferential equations, Fasciculi Mathematici Nr.27(1997), 67-79
- [14] Ch.G. Philos, On the oscillatory and asymptotic behavior of the bounded solutions of differential equations with deviating arguments, Ann. di Mat. Pur Appl. CXIX(1979), 25-40.
- [15] Ch.G. Philos, Asymptotic behavior of a class of nonoscillatory solutiond of differential equations with deviating arguments, Math. Slovaca 33(1983), 409-428.
- [16] Ch.G. Philos and V.A. Staikos, Boundedness and oscillation of solutions of differential equations with deviating arguments, An. Stu. Univ. Al.I. Cuza Iași 26(1980), 307-317.
- [17] W.F. Trench, Oscillation properties of perturbed disconjugate equations, Proc. Amer. Math. Soc. 52(1975), 147-155.
- [18] W.F. Trench, Asymptotic theory of perturbed general disconjugate equations II, Hiroshima J. Math. 14(1984), 169-187.
- [19] D. Willett, Asymptotic behavior of solutions of disconjugate n-th order differential equations, Can. J. Math. 23(1971), 293-314.
- [20] A. Wintner, The nonlocal existence problem for ordinary differential equations, Amer. J. Math. 67(1945), 277-284.

DEPARTMENT OF MATHEMATICS, MARATHWADA UNIVERSITY, AURANGABAD 431 004, (MAHARASHTRA), INDIA

# ANALYSIS OF SOME NEUTRAL DELAY DIFFERENTIAL EQUATIONS

#### RADU PRECUP

Abstract. The paper is devoted to the study of the neutral differential equation with delay  $x'(t) = f(t, x(t), x(\theta(t)), x'(\theta(t)))$ . Our analysis is concerned with the existence, uniqueness and monotone iterative approximation of the nondecreasing global solutions of the initial-value problem. We use fixed point theorems (Schauder, Krasnoselskii, Leray-Schauder) and monotone iterative techniques.

#### 1. Introduction

In this paper, we are concerned with the following nonlinear neutral delay equation

$$x'(t) = f(t, x(t), x(\theta(t)), x'(\theta(t))), \qquad (1.1)$$

where  $-\tau \leq \theta(t) \leq t$  for some  $\tau \geq 0$ .

Equations of this type arise when modelling biological, physical, etc., processes whose growth rate at any moment of time t is determined not only by the present state, but also by past states and the past growth rate. For example, such models are described by K. Gopalsamy [4] and Y. Kuang [8], from population dynamics, and by R.D. Driver [3], in connection with the two-body problem.

Basic theory and much literature on differential equations with delay, including the neutral ones, can be found in the monographs by V. Lakshmikantham, L. Wen, B. Zhang [9], V. Kolmanovskii, A. Myshkis [7], D. Bainov, D.P. Mishev [1] and J. Hale [5].

<sup>1991</sup> Mathematics Subject Classification. 34K40, 34A45.

Key words and phrases, neutral differential equation, delay differential equation, initial-value problem, fixed point, monotone iterations.

Recently, T.A. Burton [2] established an analogue of the Peano *local* existence theorem for the Cauchy problem (1.1)-(1.2), where

$$x(t) = \phi(t), \quad -\tau < t < 0.$$
 (1.2)

Motivated by the above paper, this article deals with the *global* solvability (on a given interval [0,T]) of the Cauchy problem (1.1)-(1.2).

We shall assume that f is nonnegative and continuous,  $\theta$  is continuous,  $\phi \in C^1[-\tau, 0]$  and satisfies the sewing condition

$$\phi'(0) = f(0, \phi(0), \phi(\theta(0)), \phi'(\theta(0))). \tag{1.3}$$

We shall look for nondecreasing solutions  $x \in C^1[0,T]$  with  $x(t) \in [a,R]$  and x'(0) = b, where  $a = \phi(0)$ ,  $b = \phi'(0)$  and  $a < R \le \infty$ . In case that  $R = \infty$ , all intervals of the form [c,R] should be interpreted as  $[c,\infty)$  and all inequalities of the form  $c \le R$ , as  $c < \infty$ .

Let

$$K = \{x \in C^1[0, T]; a \le x \text{ on } [0, T]\}$$

and

$$K_R = \{ x \in K; \quad x \le R \text{ on } [0, T] \}.$$

Clearly, K is a closed convex set of  $C^1[0,T]$  and (1.1)-(1.2) is equivalent to the fixed point problem A(x) = x for the map  $A: K_R \to K$ ,

$$A(x)(t) = a + \int_0^t f(s, x(s), \widetilde{x}(\theta(s)), \widetilde{x}'(\theta(s))) ds, \quad 0 \le t \le T,$$
 (1.4)

where  $\widetilde{x}(t) = \phi(t)$  on  $[-\tau, 0)$  and  $\widetilde{x}(t) = x(t)$  on [0, T]. Obviously, each fixed point x of A also satisfies x(0) = a and x'(0) = b and so, its prolongation by  $\phi$  is a function in  $C^1[-\tau, T]$ .

Notice that the dependence of f(t, x, y, z) on the neutral variable z is the cause that A is not completely continuous. This is why one tries to represent A as 68

a sum of a completely continuous mapping and a contraction. This happens when f admits the decomposition

$$f(t, x, y, z) = f_0(t, x, y) + f_1(t, x, y, z), \qquad (1.5)$$

with  $f_0$  continuous and  $f_1$  satisfying the Lipschitz condition

$$|f_1(t, x, y, z) - f_1(t, \overline{x}, \overline{y}, \overline{z})| \le \alpha |x - \overline{x}| + \beta |y - \overline{y}| + \gamma |z - \overline{z}| \tag{1.6}$$

for  $\alpha, \beta \geq 0$  and  $0 \leq \gamma < 1$ . Then A can be represented as  $A = A_0 + A_1$ , where

$$A_{0}(x)(t) = a + \int_{0}^{t} f_{0}(s, x(s), \widetilde{x}(\theta(s))) ds$$

and

$$A_{1}\left(x\right)\left(t\right) = \int_{0}^{t} f_{1}\left(s, x\left(s\right), \widetilde{x}\left(\theta\left(s\right)\right), \widetilde{x}'\left(\theta\left(s\right)\right)\right) ds.$$

The mapping  $A_0$  is completely continuous by the Ascoli-Arzelá theorem, while  $A_1$  is a contraction with respect to a suitable norm on  $C^1[0,T]$  as shows the following lemma.

**Lemma 1.1.** Suppose  $0 \le \gamma < 1$ . Then, for each  $\eta > \max\{(\alpha + \beta) / (1 - \gamma), \alpha + \beta + \gamma\}$ ,  $A_1$  is a contraction on  $K_R$  with respect to the norm

$$||x||_{1,\eta} = \max\left\{||x||_{0,\eta}, ||x'||_{0,\eta}\right\}$$

on  $C^1[0,T]$ , where

$$||x||_{0,\eta} = \max_{[0,T]} (|x(t)| \exp(-\eta t)).$$

*Proof.* Let  $x, y \in K_R$ . Using  $\theta(t) \leq t$ , we obtain

$$|A_{1}(x)(t) - A_{1}(y)(t)| \leq \alpha \int_{0}^{t} |x(s) - y(s)| ds$$

$$+\beta \int_{0}^{t} |\widetilde{x}(\theta(s)) - \widetilde{y}(\theta(s))| ds + \gamma \int_{0}^{t} |\widetilde{x}'(\theta(s)) - \widetilde{y}'(\theta(s))| ds$$

$$\leq \alpha \int_{0}^{t} |x(s) - y(s)| \exp(-\eta s) \exp(\eta s) ds$$

$$+\beta \int_{0}^{t} |\widetilde{x}(\theta(s)) - \widetilde{y}(\theta(s))| \exp(-\eta \theta(s)) \exp(\eta \theta(s)) ds$$

$$+\gamma \int_{0}^{t} |\widetilde{x}'(\theta(s)) - \widetilde{y}'(\theta(s))| \exp(-\eta \theta(s)) \exp(\eta \theta(s)) ds$$

$$\leq [(\alpha + \beta) \eta^{-1} ||x - y||_{0,\eta} + \gamma \eta^{-1} ||x' - y'||_{0,\eta}] \exp(\eta t).$$

It follows that

$$||A_1(x) - A_1(y)||_{0,n} \le (\alpha + \beta + \gamma) \eta^{-1} ||x - y||_{1,n}$$

Similarly

$$\begin{aligned} \left|A_{1}\left(x\right)'\left(t\right) - A_{1}\left(y\right)'\left(t\right)\right| &\leq \alpha \left|x\left(t\right) - y\left(t\right)\right| \\ + \beta \left|\widetilde{x}\left(\theta\left(t\right)\right) - \widetilde{y}\left(\theta\left(t\right)\right)\right| + \gamma \left|\widetilde{x}'\left(\theta\left(t\right)\right) - \widetilde{y}'\left(\theta\left(t\right)\right)\right| \\ &\leq \alpha \int_{0}^{t} \left|x'\left(s\right) - y'\left(s\right)\right| ds + \beta \int_{0}^{\theta\left(t\right)} \left|\widetilde{x}'\left(s\right) - \widetilde{y}'\left(s\right)\right| ds \\ + \gamma \left|\widetilde{x}'\left(\theta\left(t\right)\right) - \widetilde{y}'\left(\theta\left(t\right)\right)\right| &\leq (\alpha + \beta) \int_{0}^{t} \left|x'\left(s\right) - y'\left(s\right)\right| ds \\ + \gamma \left|\widetilde{x}\left(\theta\left(t\right)\right) - \widetilde{y}\left(\theta\left(t\right)\right)\right| &\leq \left[(\alpha + \beta) \eta^{-1} + \gamma\right] \left|\left|x' - y'\right|\right|_{0,\eta} \exp\left(\eta t\right). \end{aligned}$$

Hence

$$||A_1(x)' - A_1(y)'||_{0,\eta} \le [(\alpha + \beta) \eta^{-1} + \gamma] ||x - y||_{1,\eta}.$$

Therefore

$$||A_1(x) - A_1(y)||_{1,\eta} \le L ||x - y||_{1,\eta},$$
 (1.7)

where

$$L = \max\left\{ (\alpha + \beta + \gamma) \eta^{-1}, (\alpha + \beta) \eta^{-1} + \gamma \right\}. \tag{1.8}$$

There is a remarkable case when in spite of the neutral variable, we still can work with completely continuous mappings: the case when the *step method* applies. We are in this case if

$$\theta(t) < t \text{ on } (0, T] \text{ and } \inf\{t > 0; \ \theta(t) > 0\} > 0.$$
 (1.9)

By using the step method, the solving of (1.1)-(1.2) is reduced to that of a finite number of Cauchy problems for equations without deviated arguments. To explain this, let  $t_0 = 0$  and

$$t_n = \inf \{ t \in (t_{n-1}, T]; \ \theta(t) > t_{n-1} \}, \quad n = 1, 2, ...,$$
 (1.10)

where we set  $t_n = T$  in case that the infimum is taken over the empty set. Obviously,  $(t_n)$  is a bounded nondecreasing sequence and if  $t_m = T$  for some m, then  $t_n = T$  for all  $n \ge m$ . In addition, if  $t_n < T$ , then

$$\theta(t_n) = t_{n-1} \text{ and } \theta(t) < t_{n-1} \text{ for } t_{n-1} \le t \le t_n.$$
 (1.11)

The second inequality in (1.9) implies  $t_0 < t_1 \le T$ , while the first one assures the strict monotonicity  $t_{n-1} < t_n$  whenever  $t_{n-1} < T$ , and also the existence of a  $k \ge 1$  with  $t_{k-1} < t_k = T$ . Indeed, otherwise, we should have  $t_0 < t_1 < ... < t_n < ... < T$ . If we denote  $t_* = \lim_{n \to \infty} t_n$ , then  $0 < t_* \le T$  and  $\theta(t_*) = t_*$ , which contradicts (1.9). Thus, there exists a finite partition of [0, T], say

$$0 = t_0 < t_1 < \dots < t_{k-1} < t_k = T$$

A solution to (1.1)-(1.2) will be defined step by step, on each subinterval  $[-\tau, t_n]$ , n=1,2,...,k. Denote  $x_0=\phi$  and let  $x_{n+1}\in C^1[-\tau,t_{n+1}]$  be a prolongation of  $x_n\in C^1[-\tau,t_n]$  by a solution of the following problem

$$\begin{cases} x'(t) = f(t, x(t), x_n(\theta(t)), x'_n(\theta(t))), & t_n \leq t \leq t_{n+1}, \\ x(t_n) = a_n, \end{cases}$$

$$(1.12)$$

where  $a_n = x_n(t_n)$ , n = 0, 1, ..., k - 1. It is clear that  $x_k$  will represent a solution of (1.1)-(1.2). Thus, at each step n, we have to solve (1.12), or equivalently, to find a

fixed point of the completely continuous mapping  $A_n: C[t_n, t_{n+1}] \to C[t_n, t_{n+1}]$ ,

$$A_{n}(x)(t) = a_{n} + \int_{t_{n}}^{t} f(s, x(s), x_{n}(\theta(s)), x'_{n}(\theta(t))) ds.$$
 (1.13)

## Organization of the paper

In Section 2, we discuss the initial value problem for (1.1) in case that the step method applies. In Section 3, the same problem is studied when the step method does not apply. In Section 4, we obtain minimal and maximal solutions to the Cauchy problem. We use fixed point theorems (Schauder, Krasnoselskii, Leray-Schauder) and monotone iterative techniques.

Notice that by a somewhat similar approach, we discussed in [6] the initial value problem for a delay integral equation modelling infectious disease (see also [11]). The results are new and they improve and complement the existing literature (see [10] for example, for related topics).

We finish this introductory section by some abstract existence principles.

#### Fixed point theory

**Theorem 1.2.** (Schauder) Let X be a Banach space and  $D \subset X$  nonempty bounded closed convex. Suppose  $A: D \to D$  is compact (i.e. continuous with A(D) relatively compact). Then A has at least one fixed point.

**Theorem 1.3.** (Krasnoselskii) Let X be a Banach space and  $D \subset X$  nonempty bounded closed convex. Suppose  $A_0: D \to X$  is compact,  $A_1: D \to X$  is a contraction and that  $A_0(x) + A_1(y) \in D$  for all  $x, y \in D$ . Then  $A_0 + A_1$  has at least one fixed point.

**Theorem 1.4.** (Leray-Schauder) Let X be a Banach space,  $K \subset X$  closed convex and  $U \subset K$  bounded open in K. Suppose  $A : \tilde{U} \to K$  is compact and

$$(1 - \lambda) x_0 + \lambda A(x) \neq x$$
 for all  $x \in \partial U$  and  $\lambda \in [0, 1]$ ,

for some  $x_0 \in U$ . Then A has at least one fixed point in U.

# 2. Existence via the step method

Let us list our assumptions:

- (a1)  $\theta \in C[0,T], -\tau \leq \theta$  and (1.9) (step condition) holds.
- (a2)  $\phi \in C^1[-\tau, 0]$  and (1.3) (sewing condition) is satisfied.
- (a3) f(t, x, y, z) is nonnegative and continuous on  $D = [0, T] \times [a, R] \times [m, M] \times [m', \infty)$ , where  $a < R \le \infty$ ,  $m = \min_{[-\tau, 0]} \phi(t)$ ,  $M = \max\{R, \max_{[-\tau, 0]} \phi(t)\}$  and  $m' = \min\{0, \min_{[-\tau, 0]} \phi'(t)\}$ .
- (a4)  $f(t, x, y, z) \le \alpha(t) \beta(x) \gamma(y, z)$  on D, where  $\alpha, \beta, \gamma$  are continuous,  $\alpha \ge 0, \beta > 0$ ,  $\gamma \ge 0$  and

$$\sup_{[m,M]\times[m',\infty)}\gamma(y,z)\cdot\int_{0}^{T}\alpha(t)\,dt<\int_{0}^{R}\frac{du}{\beta(u)}$$
(2.1)

(Wintner type condition).

We make the convention that when the left side in (2.1) equals  $\infty$ , then the right side is  $\infty$  too.

**Theorem 2.1.** Suppose (a1)-(a4) are satisfied. Then (1.1)-(1.2) has at least one solution  $x \in C^1[-\tau, T]$  with  $a \le x < R$  and  $x' \ge 0$  on [0, T].

*Proof.* First we prove that for each  $x \in C^1[-\tau, t_n]$  with  $a \le x \le R$  and satisfying (1.1) and (1.2) on  $[0, t_n]$ , there exists  $R_n \in [a, R)$  depending only on the restriction of x to  $[-\tau, t_{n-1}]$ , such that  $x \le R_n$  on  $[0, t_n]$ .

Indeed, by (a4), we have

$$x'(t) \le \alpha(t) \beta(x(t)) \gamma(x(\theta(t)), x'(\theta(t))), \quad 0 \le t \le t_n.$$

Divide by  $\beta(x(t))$  and integrate from 0 to  $t_n$  to obtain

$$\int_{a}^{x(t_{n})} \frac{du}{\beta(u)} = \int_{0}^{t_{n}} \frac{x'(t)}{\beta(x(t))} dt \leq M_{n} \int_{0}^{t_{n}} \alpha(t) dt,$$

where  $M_n = \max_{[0,t_{n-1}]} \gamma\left(x\left(\theta\left(t\right)\right), x'\left(\theta\left(t\right)\right)\right)$ . By (2.1), this implies

$$\int_{a}^{x(t_{n})} \frac{du}{\beta(u)} \leq M_{n} \int_{0}^{t_{n}} \alpha(t) dt < \int_{a}^{R} \frac{du}{\beta(u)}.$$

Thus  $x(t_n) \leq R_n < R$ , where

$$M_n \int_0^{t_n} \alpha(t) dt = \int_a^{R_n} \frac{du}{\beta(u)}.$$
 (2.2)

Since x is nondecreasing on  $[0, t_n]$ , we have  $x(t) \leq x(t_n) \leq R_n$  for all  $t \in [0, t_n]$ , as claimed.

Now suppose we have already defined  $x_n \in C^1[-\tau, t_n]$ , a solution of (1.1)-(1.2) on  $[-\tau, t_n]$ , with  $a \leq x_n \leq R$  and  $x_n' \geq 0$  on  $[0, t_n]$ . Then  $x_n \leq R_n < R$  and

$$\int_{a}^{a_{n}} \frac{du}{\beta(u)} \le M_{n} \int_{0}^{t_{n}} \alpha(t) dt, \tag{2.3}$$

where  $R_n$  is given by (2.2), with  $M_n = \max_{[0,t_{n-1}]} \gamma \left( x_n \left( \theta \left( t \right) \right), x_n' \left( \theta \left( t \right) \right) \right)$ .

Next we try to extend  $x_n$  to a solution  $x_{n+1} \in C^1[-\tau, t_{n+1}]$  satisfying  $a \le x_{n+1} \le R$  and  $x'_{n+1} \ge 0$  on  $[0, t_{n+1}]$ . Let  $R_{n+1}$  be given by (2.2), for  $M_{n+1} = \max_{[0,t_n]} \gamma\left(x_n\left(\theta\left(t\right)\right), x'_n\left(\theta\left(t\right)\right)\right)$ . It is clear that  $M_n \le M_{n+1}$  and  $R_n \le R_{n+1} < R$ . Choose a finite  $R' \in (R_{n+1}, R]$  and define

$$K_n = \{x \in C[t_n, t_{n+1}]; a < x\}, \quad U_n = \{x \in K_n; x < R'\}$$

and

$$A_n: \overline{U}_n \to K_n, \quad A_n(x)(t) = a_n + \int_{t_n}^t f(s, x(s), x_n(\theta(s)), x'_n(\theta(s))) ds.$$

Obviously,  $K_n \subset C[t_n, t_{n+1}]$  is closed and convex,  $U_n \subset K_n$  is bounded and open in  $K_n$ , the constant function  $a_n$  belongs to  $U_n$  (because  $a_n \leq R_n < R'$ ) and  $A_n$  is completely continuous. Also, if x is a fixed point of  $A_n$ , then  $x(t_n) = a_n$ ,  $x'(t_n) = x'_n(t_n)$  and the prolongation  $x_{n+1}$  of  $x_n$  by x will represent a solution of (1.1)-(1.2) on  $[-\tau, t_{n+1}]$  satisfying  $a \leq x_{n+1} \leq R$  and  $x'_{n+1} \geq 0$  on  $[0, t_{n+1}]$ .

The existence of a fixed point of  $A_n$  will follow by the Leray-Schauder principle if the boundary condition

$$x \neq (1 - \lambda) a_n + \lambda A_n(x)$$
 for all  $x \in \partial U_n$ ,  $\lambda \in (0, 1)$  (2.4)

holds. To check it, suppose  $x \in \overline{U}_n$  satisfies  $x = (1 - \lambda) a_n + \lambda A_n(x)$  for some  $\lambda \in (0, 1)$ . Then,  $x(t_n) = a_n$  and

$$x'(t) = \lambda f(t, x(t), x_n(\theta(t)), x'_n(\theta(t)))$$
 for all  $t \in [t_n, t_{n+1}]$ .

As above, we obtain

$$\int_{a_n}^{x(t_{n+1})} \frac{du}{\beta(u)} \le M_{n+1} \int_{t_n}^{t_{n+1}} \alpha(t) dt.$$

Taking into account (2.3) and  $M_n \leq M_{n+1}$ , we deduce

$$\int_{a}^{x(t_{n+1})} \frac{du}{\beta(u)} \leq M_{n+1} \int_{0}^{t_{n+1}} \alpha(t) dt.$$

Hence  $x(t_{n+1}) \leq R_{n+1}$  and consequently,  $x \leq R_{n+1} < R'$  on  $[t_n, t_{n+1}]$ . Thus,  $x \notin \partial U_n$  and (2.4) is proved.

Remark 2.1. The conclusion of Theorem 2.1 remains true if instead of (a4) the following condition is satisfied:

(a4')  $f(t, x, y, z) \le \beta(x) \delta(t, y, z)$  on D, where  $\beta > 0, \delta \ge 0$  and

$$T \cdot \sup_{[0,T] \times [m,M] \times [m',\infty)} \delta\left(t,y,z\right) < \int_{a}^{R} \frac{du}{\beta\left(u\right)}. \tag{2.5}$$

Remark 2.2. Suppose  $R = \infty$  and that in (a4'),  $\beta(u) = u + c$ , where  $c \ge 0$ . In this case, (2.5) trivially holds since its right side equals to infinity. Moreover, a fixed point of  $A_n$  follows directly by Schauder's fixed point theorem. Indeed, if  $R = \infty$ , the map  $A_n$  can be defined on the entire  $K_n$  and  $A_n(K_n) \subset K_n$ . In addition, for  $\eta > 0$  and  $x \in K_n$ , we have

$$0 \le A_n(x)(t) \le a_n + \widetilde{M}_n \int_{t_n}^t (x(s) + c) ds$$

$$=a_{n}+c\widetilde{M}_{n}\left(t-t_{n}\right)+\widetilde{M}_{n}\int_{t_{n}}^{t}x\left(s\right)ds$$

$$\leq \widetilde{a}_n + \widetilde{M}_n \eta^{-1} ||x||_{0,\eta} \exp(-\eta t), \quad t_n \leq t \leq t_{n+1},$$

where  $\widetilde{M}_{n} = \max_{[t_{n},t_{n+1}]} \delta\left(t,x_{n}\left(\theta\left(t\right)\right),x_{n}'\left(\theta\left(t\right)\right)\right)$  and  $\widetilde{a}_{n} = a_{n} + c\widetilde{M}_{n}\left(t_{n+1} - t_{n}\right)$ . In consequence,

$$||A_n(x)||_{0,\eta} \leq \widetilde{a}_n + \widetilde{M}_n \eta^{-1} ||x||_{0,\eta} \quad (x \in K_n).$$

Thus, if we choose  $\eta > \widetilde{M}_n$  and  $R' \geq \widetilde{a}_n / \left(1 - \widetilde{M}_n \eta^{-1}\right)$ , then Schauder's theorem applies on  $\{x \in K_n; ||x||_{0,n} \leq R'\}$ .

**Remark 2.3.** Suppose  $R = \infty$  and that a more restrictive condition than (a4') holds, namely

$$\left(a 4"\right) \left| f\left(t,x,y,z\right) - f\left(t,\bar{x},y,z\right) \right| \leq L\left(t,y,z\right) \left| x - \bar{x} \right| \quad on \ D,$$

where L is continuous and nonnegative.

From (a4"),

$$f(t, x, y, z) < L(t, y, z)(x - a) + f(t, a, y, z) < \delta(t, y, z) x$$

where  $\delta(t, y, z) = \max\{L(t, y, z), f(t, a, y, z)/a\}$ . Hence we are in the frame of Remark 2.2. In addition, the initial value problem has a unique solution and at each step, the unique fixed point of  $A_n$  can be obtained by means of the contraction principle. Indeed, for  $\eta > 0$  and  $x, y \in K_n$ , we have

$$\left|A_{n}\left(x\right)\left(t\right)-A_{n}\left(y\right)\left(t\right)\right|\leq\int_{t_{n}}^{t}L\left(s,x_{n}\left(\theta\left(s\right)\right),x_{n}'\left(\theta\left(s\right)\right)\right)\left|x\left(s\right)-y\left(s\right)\right|ds$$

$$\leq \overline{M}_{n} \int_{t_{n}}^{t} |x\left(s\right) - y\left(s\right)| ds \leq \overline{M}_{n} \eta^{-1} ||x - y||_{0,\eta} \exp\left(-\eta t\right),$$

where  $\overline{M}_n = \max_{[t_n, t_{n+1}]} L(t, x_n(\theta(t)), x'_n(\theta(t)))$ . Now our claim follows if we choose  $\eta > \overline{M}_n$ .

## 3. Existence without the step condition

The assumptions for this section are as follows:

(A1) 
$$\theta \in C[0,T]$$
 and  $-\tau \leq \theta(t) \leq t$ .

$$(A2) = (a2).$$

(A3) f(t, x, y, z) is nonnegative on D and admits the decomposition (1.5), where  $f_0, f_1$  are continuous and  $f_1$  satisfies the Lipschitz condition (1.6) for some  $\alpha, \beta \geq 0$  and  $\gamma \in [0, 1)$ .

(A4)  $f(t, x, y, z) \le \alpha(t) \beta(x)$  on D, where  $\alpha, \beta$  are continuous,  $\alpha \ge 0, \beta > 0$  and

$$\int_{0}^{T} \alpha(t) dt < \int_{a}^{R} \frac{du}{\beta(u)}.$$
 (3.1)

**Theorem 3.1.** Suppose (A1)-(A4) are satisfied. Then (1.1)-(1.2) has at least one solution  $x \in C^1[-\tau,T]$  with  $a \le x \le R$  and  $x' \ge 0$  on [0,T]. Moreover, any such solution satisfies

$$x(t) \le R_*, \quad 0 \le t \le T, \tag{3.2}$$

where  $R_* < R$  is so that

$$\int_{0}^{T} \alpha(t) dt = \int_{a}^{R_{\bullet}} \frac{du}{\beta(u)}.$$
 (3.3)

*Proof.* With the notations of Section 1, the mapping  $A: K_R \to K$  is the sum  $A_0 + A_1$ , where  $A_0$  is completely continuous and  $A_1$  is a contraction with respect to a suitable norm on  $C^1[0,T]$ .

We claim that (3.2) holds for each solution  $x \in K_R$  to

$$x = (1 - \lambda) a + \lambda A(x) \quad (\lambda \in [0, 1]). \tag{3.4}$$

Once the claim is satisfied the result follows from the Leray-Schauder principle applied to  $A: \overline{U} \to K$ , where  $U = \{x \in K; x < R' \text{ on } [0,T]\}$  and R' is any number such that  $R_* < R' \le R$ .

To prove the claim, let  $x \in K_R$  be any solution of (3.4). Then

$$x'(t) = \lambda f(t, x(t), x(\theta(t)), x'(\theta(t))) \le \alpha(t) \beta(x(t))$$
 on  $[0, T]$ .

It follows that

$$\int_{a}^{x(t)} \frac{du}{\beta(u)} = \int_{0}^{t} \frac{x'(s)}{\beta(x(s))} ds \leq \int_{0}^{t} \alpha(s) ds.$$

This together with (3.3) implies (3.2).

Suppose now that instead of (A4), the following condition holds. (A4')  $|f_0(t,x,y)| \leq \alpha_0 x + \beta_0 |y| + \delta$  on D, where  $\alpha_0, \beta_0$  and  $\delta$  are nonnegative constants.

**Theorem 3.2.** Suppose (A1)-(A3), (A4') are satisfied and  $R = \infty$ . Then (1.1)-(1.2) has at least one solution  $x \in C^1[-\tau, T]$  such that  $a \le x$  and  $x' \ge 0$  on [0, T].

*Proof.* Since  $R = \infty$ , we may define  $A: K \to K$  and, as above,  $A = A_0 + A_1$ , where  $A_0$  is completely continuous and  $A_1$  is a contraction with respect to the norm  $\|.\|_{1,\eta}$  on  $C^1[0,T]$ , for  $\eta > \max\{(\alpha + \beta) / (1-\gamma), \alpha + \beta + \gamma\}$ .

We claim that there exists  $\eta$  sufficiently large and a finite R' > 0 such that

$$x, y \in K, \|x\|_{1,n} \le R', \|y\|_{1,n} \le R' \text{ imply } \|A_0(x) + A_1(y)\|_{1,n} \le R'.$$
 (3.5)

Once the claim is proved the result is a consequence of the Krasnoselskii fixed point theorem.

To establish (3.5) we need the following estimates:

$$|A_{0}(x)(t)| \leq a + \alpha_{0} \int_{0}^{t} x(s) ds + \beta_{0} \int_{0}^{t} \widetilde{x}(\theta(s)) ds + \delta t$$

$$= a + \alpha_{0} \int_{0}^{t} x(s) ds + \beta_{0} \int_{(0 < \theta(s))} x(\theta(s)) ds + \beta_{0} \int_{(\theta(s) < 0)} \phi(\theta(s)) ds + \delta t$$

$$\leq a + (\alpha_{0} + \beta_{0}) \eta^{-1} ||x||_{0,\eta} \exp(\eta t) + \beta_{0} ||\phi||_{0} T + \delta T$$

$$= (\alpha_{0} + \beta_{0}) \eta^{-1} ||x||_{0,\eta} \exp(\eta t) + c'_{0}.$$

Also

$$|A_{0}(x)'(t)| \leq \alpha_{0}x(t) + \beta_{0}\widetilde{x}(\theta(t)) + \delta$$

$$= \alpha_{0} \int_{0}^{t} x'(s) ds + \beta_{0} \int_{0}^{\theta(t)} \widetilde{x}'(s) ds + (\alpha_{0} + \beta_{0}) a + \delta$$

$$\leq (\alpha_{0} + \beta_{0}) \eta^{-1} ||x'||_{0,\eta} \exp(\eta t) + \beta_{0} ||\phi'||_{0} T + (\alpha_{0} + \beta_{0}) a + \delta$$

$$= (\alpha_{0} + \beta_{0}) \eta^{-1} ||x'||_{0,\eta} \exp(\eta t) + c_{0}''.$$

Thus

$$||A_0(x)||_{1,\eta} \leq (\alpha_0 + \beta_0) \eta^{-1} ||x||_{1,\eta} + c_0.$$

This together with (1.7) yields

$$||A_0(x) + A_1(y)||_{1,n} \le (\alpha_0 + \beta_0) \eta^{-1} ||x||_{1,n} + L ||y||_{1,n} + c,$$

where L is given by (1.8). It is clear that if  $\eta$  is sufficiently large, then  $(\alpha_0 + \beta_0) \eta^{-1} + L < 1$  and we may find R' > 0 such that (3.5) holds.

## 4. Minimal and maximal solutions

**Theorem 4.1.** Suppose (a1)-(a3) are satisfied and  $w \in C^1[0,T]$ ,  $a \le w \le R$ , is an upper solution, i.e.

$$w'(t) > f(t, w(t), \widetilde{w}(\theta(t)), \widetilde{w}'(\theta(t))), \quad 0 < t < T.$$

$$(4.1)$$

In addition assume that

$$f(t, x_1, y_1, z_1) \le f(t, x_2, y_2, z_2) \tag{4.2}$$

for  $x_1 \leq x_2 \leq w(t)$ ,  $y_1 \leq y_2 \leq \widetilde{w}(\theta(t))$  and  $z_1 \leq z_2 \leq \widetilde{w}'(\theta(t))$ . Then we may define  $\underline{x}_0 = \overline{x}_0 = \phi$ ,

$$\underline{x}_{n+1}(t) = \begin{cases} \underline{x}_n(t) & on \left[-\tau, t_n\right] \\ \lim_{t \to \infty} u_{nj}(t) & on \left[t_n, t_{n+1}\right] \end{cases}$$

$$(4.3)$$

and

$$\bar{x}_{n+1}(t) = \begin{cases} \bar{x}_n(t) & on \ [-\tau, t_n] \\ \lim_{t \to \infty} v_{nj}(t) & on \ [t_n, t_{n+1}], \end{cases}$$
(4.4)

where  $u_{n0}(t) \equiv a$ ,  $v_{n0}(t) = w(t)$ ,  $u_{nj} = \underline{A}_n(u_{nj-1})$ ,  $v_{nj} = \overline{A}_n(v_{nj-1})$ ,

$$\underline{A}_{n}(x)(t) = \underline{x}_{n}(t_{n}) + \int_{t_{n}}^{t} f(s, x(s), \underline{x}_{n}(\theta(s)), \underline{x}'_{n}(\theta(s))) ds,$$

$$\bar{A}_{n}(x)(t) = \bar{x}_{n}(t_{n}) + \int_{t_{n}}^{t} f(s, x(s), \bar{x}_{n}(\theta(s)), \bar{x}_{n}(\theta(s))) ds$$

 $(t \in [t_n, t_{n+1}])$ , j = 1, 2, ..., n = 0, 1, ..., k-1. Moreover,  $\underline{x} = \underline{x}_k$  and  $\ddot{x} = \bar{x}_k$  are the minimal and maximal solutions of (1.1)-(1.2) satisfying  $a \le x \le w$  on [0, T],

$$a \leq \underline{x} \leq \bar{x} \leq w, \quad 0 \leq \underline{x}' \leq \bar{x}' \leq w' \quad on \ [0, T],$$
 
$$u_{n0} \leq u_{n1} \leq \dots \leq u_{nj} \leq \dots \quad on \ [t_n, t_{n+1}]$$
 
$$v_{n0} > v_{n1} > \dots > v_{nj} > \dots \quad on \ [t_n, t_{n+1}]$$

and

$$u_{nj}(t) \to \underline{x}(t), \quad v_{nj}(t) \to \bar{x}(t) \quad as \ j \to \infty$$

uniformly on  $[t_n, t_{n+1}]$  (n = 0, 1, ..., k-1).

*Proof.* Suppose we have already defined  $\underline{x}_n$  and  $\hat{x}_n$  such that

$$a \le \underline{x}_n \le \bar{x}_n \le w \text{ and } 0 \le \underline{x}'_n \le \bar{x}'_n \le w' \text{ on } [0, t_n].$$
 (4.5)

First we prove that

$$a \le u_{nj} \le v_{nj} \le w$$
 on  $[t_n, t_{n+1}],$  (4.6)

by induction after j. For j = 0, (4.6) trivially holds. Assume (4.6) is true for some j. Then, using also (4.2), we easily see that

$$a \leq \underline{A}_n(a) \leq \underline{A}_n(u_{nj}) \leq \underline{A}_n(v_{nj}) \leq \tilde{A}_n(v_{nj}) \leq \tilde{A}_n(w) \leq w,$$

which shows that (4.6) also holds for j+1. Thus (4.6) is true for all  $j \geq 0$ . Since  $\underline{A}_n$  and  $\bar{A}_n$  are completely continuous, the sequences  $(u_{nj})_{j\geq 0}$  and  $(v_{nj})_{j\geq 0}$  will contain convergent subsequences. Due to their monotonicity, the entire sequences will converge on  $[t_n, t_{n+1}]$ , which justifies (4.3) and (4.4). Also, by (4.6),  $a \leq \underline{x}_{n+1} \leq \bar{x}_{n+1} \leq w$  on  $[0, t_{n+1}]$ . Then

$$0 \leq \underline{x}'_{n+1}(t) = f\left(t, \underline{x}_{n+1}(t), \underline{x}_n(\theta(t)), \underline{x}'_n(\theta(t))\right)$$

$$\leq f\left(t, \overline{x}_{n+1}(t), \overline{x}_n(\theta(t)), \overline{x}'_n(\theta(t))\right) = \overline{x}'_{n+1}(t)$$

$$\leq f\left(t, w(t), \widetilde{w}(\theta(t)), \widetilde{w}'(\theta(t))\right) \leq w'(t).$$

Hence (4.5) also holds for j+1.

The next result is about the equality  $\underline{x} = \bar{x}$  in Theorem 3.1.

**Theorem 4.2.** Suppose the assumptions of Theorem 3.1 are satisfied. In addition assume a > 0 and that there exists a function  $\chi : [a_w, 1) \to \mathbf{R}$ , where  $a_w = a \min_{[0,T]} 1/w(t)$ , such that for all  $\rho \in [a_w, 1)$ ,  $t \in [0,T]$ ,  $x \in [a,w(t)]$ ,  $y \in [m,M]$  and  $z \in \{m',\infty)$ , one has

$$1 > \chi(\rho) > \rho \quad and \quad f(t, \rho x, y, z) > \chi(\rho) f(t, x, y, z). \tag{4.7}$$

Then  $\underline{x} = \bar{x}$  is the unique solution of (1.1)-(1.2) satisfying  $a \le x \le w$  on [0, T].

Proof. We show succesively that  $\underline{x}_n = \bar{x}_n$  for n = 0, 1, ..., k. For n = 0, this trivially holds. Assume  $\underline{x}_n = \bar{x}_n$  for some n. Then  $\underline{A}_n = \bar{A}_n$ . Clearly, the restrictions of  $\underline{x}_{n+1}$ ,  $\bar{x}_{n+1}$  to  $[t_n, t_{n+1}]$  represent the minimal and maximal fixed point of  $B_n := \bar{A}_n$  satisfying  $a \leq x \leq w$  on  $[t_n, t_{n+1}]$ . To show that  $\underline{x}_{n+1} = \bar{x}_{n+1}$  on  $[t_n, t_{n+1}]$ , let  $\rho_0 = \min_{[t_n, t_{n+1}]} (\underline{x}_{n+1} \ (t) / \bar{x}_{n+1} \ (t))$ . We have  $\rho_0 \in [a_w, 1]$ . We claim that  $\rho_0 = 1$ . Assume  $\rho_0 < 1$ . Since  $\underline{x}_{n+1} \ (t) \geq \max\{a, \rho_0 \bar{x}_{n+1} \ (t)\} = \rho_0 \max\{a/\rho_0, \bar{x}_{n+1} \ (t)\} \geq a$  on  $[t_n, t_{n+1}]$ , we get

$$\underline{x}_{n+1} = B_n\left(\underline{x}_{n+1}\right) \ge B_n\left(\rho_0 \max\left\{a/\rho_0, \bar{x}_{n+1}\right\}\right)$$

$$> \chi(\rho_0) B_n(\max\{a/\rho_0, \bar{x}_{n+1}\}) \ge \chi(\rho_0) B_n(\bar{x}_{n+1}) = \chi(\rho_0) \bar{x}_{n+1},$$

on  $[t_n, t_{n+1}]$ . It follows  $\rho_0 \ge \chi(\rho_0)$ , a contradiction. Therefore  $\rho_0 = 1$  and so  $\underline{x}_{n+1} = \bar{x}_{n+1}$  on  $[t_n, t_{n+1}]$ .

**Remark 4.1.** For example, we may take  $\chi(\rho) = \rho^{\alpha}$ , where  $\alpha \in (0,1)$ , in case that f(t,x,y,z) is of the form  $x^{\alpha}g(t,y,z)$ . Also,  $\chi(\rho) = \log(1+a\rho)/\log(1+a)$  for  $f(t,x,y,z) = g(t,y,z)\log(1+x)$ .

**Theorem 4.3.** Suppose (A1)-(A3) are satisfied and that  $w \in C^1[0,T]$ ,  $a \leq w \leq R$ , is an upper solution. In addition assume that (4.2) holds. Denote

$$U_{0}\left(t\right)\equiv a,\ V_{0}\left(t\right)=w\left(t\right),\ U_{n+1}=A\left(U_{n}\right)\ and\ V_{n+1}=A\left(V_{n}\right)$$

 $(t \in [0, T]), n = 0, 1, .... Then$ 

$$a = U_0 \le U_1 \le ... \le U_n \le ... \le V_n \le ... \le V_1 \le V_0 = w,$$
 (4.8)

$$0 < U_1' < \dots < U_n' < \dots < V_n' < \dots < V_1' < w'$$

$$(4.9)$$

on [0, T]. Also, the following limits exist

$$\underline{x}(t) = \lim_{n \to \infty} U_n(t), \quad \bar{x}(t) = \lim_{n \to \infty} V_n(t) \tag{4.10}$$

uniformly on [0,T]. Moreover,  $\underline{x}$ ,  $\bar{x}$  are the minimal and maximal solutions to (1.1)-(1.2) in  $K_R$  satisfying  $x \leq w$  on [0,T].

*Proof.* From  $a \leq w$  we see that  $a \leq A(a) \leq A(w) \leq w$  and  $0 \leq A(a)' \leq A(w)' \leq w'$ , i.e.  $U_0 \leq U_1 \leq V_1 \leq V_0$  and  $0 \leq U_1' \leq V_1' \leq w'$ . Further, (4.8) and (4.9) follow successively. Let  $\alpha$  be the Kuratowski measure of noncompactness on the space  $C^1[0,T]$  endowed with the norm  $\|.\|_{1,n}$ . Since

$$(U_n)_{n\geq 1} = A\left((U_n)_{n\geq 0}\right),\,$$

 $A_0$  is completely continuous and  $A_1$  is a contraction, we have

$$\alpha\left((U_n)_{n\geq 1}\right) = \alpha\left(A\left((U_n)_{n\geq 0}\right)\right) \leq \alpha\left(A_0\left((U_n)_{n\geq 0}\right)\right)$$

$$+\alpha \left(A_1\left((U_n)_{n\geq 0}\right)\right) = \alpha \left(A_1\left((U_n)_{n\geq 0}\right)\right) \leq L\alpha \left((U_n)_{n\geq 0}\right),$$

where L is given by (1.8). Recall that L < 1. In consequence,  $\alpha\left((U_n)_{n\geq 0}\right) = 0$ . Thus  $(U_n)_{n\geq 0}$  contains a convergent subsequence. By the monotonicity, the entire sequence  $(U_n)$  will converge. Similarly,  $(V_n)$  is convergent.

**Remark 4.2.** Let (A1)-(A2) be satisfied. In addition assume that the following condition holds instead of (A3):

(A3') f(t, x, y, z) is nonnegative and continuous on D.

Then Theorem 3.2 is still true with the meaning that  $\underline{x}$  and  $\bar{x}$  are weak solutions of (1.1), i.e.  $\underline{x}$ ,  $\bar{x} \in AC[0,T]$  (are absolutely continuous) and satisfy (1.1) 82

almost everywhere on [0,T]. Indeed, by (4.8), (4.9) and the Beppo-Levi theorem, there exist  $\underline{x}, y \in L^1(0,T)$  with

$$U_n(t) \to \underline{x}(t), \quad U'_n(t) \to \underline{y}(t) \quad on [0,T],$$

$$U_n \to \underline{x}$$
 and  $U'_n \to y$  in  $L^1(0,T)$ .

From

$$U_{n}\left(t\right) = a + \int_{0}^{t} U_{n}'\left(s\right) ds$$

we then derive

$$\underline{x}(t) = a + \int_0^t \underline{y}(s) ds,$$

which shows that  $\underline{x} \in AC[0,T]$  and  $\underline{x}'(t) = \underline{y}(t)$  for a.e.  $t \in [0,T]$ . Letting  $n \to \infty$  in

$$U'_{n+1}(t) = f\left(t, U_n(t), \widetilde{U}_n(\theta(t)), \widetilde{U}'_n(\theta(t))\right),$$

we obtain

$$\underline{y}(t) = f(t,\underline{x}(t),\underline{\widetilde{x}}(\theta(t)),\underline{\widetilde{y}}(\theta(t))) \quad \text{for all } t \in [0,T],$$

i.e.

$$\underline{x}'(t) = f\left(t, \underline{x}(t), \underline{\widetilde{x}}(\theta(t)), \underline{\widetilde{x}}'(\theta(t))\right) \quad a.e. \ t \in [0, T].$$

### References

- [1] D. Bainov, D.P. Mishev, Oscillation Theory for Neutral Differential Equations with Delay, Adam Hilger, Bristol, 1991.
- [2] T.A. Burton, An existence theorem for a neutral equation, Nonlinear Studies 5, No. 1 (1998), 1-6.
- [3] R.D. Driver, A neutral system with state-dependent delay, J. Differential Equations 54 (1984), 73-86.
- [4] K. Gopalsamy, Stability and Oscillations in Delay Differential Equations of Population Dynamics, Kluwer, Dordrecht, 1992.
- [5] J. Hale, Theory of Functional Differential Equations, Springer-Verlag, Berlin, 1977.
- [6] E. Kirr, R. Precup, Analysis of a nonlinear integral equation modelling infectious diseases, Proc. Internat. Conf. Timis oara 1997, 178-195.
- [7] V. Kolmanovskii, A. Myshkis, Applied Theory of Functional Differential Equations, Kluwer, Dordrecht, 1992.
- [8] Y. Kuang, Delay Differential Equations with Applications to Population Dynamics, Academic Press, Boston, 1993.

- [9] V. Lakshmikantham, L. Wen, B. Zhang, Theory of Differential Equations with Unbounded Delay, Kluwer, Dordrecht, 1994.
- [10] S.K. Ntouyas, Y.G. Sficas, P.Ch. Tsamatos, Existence results for initial value problems for neutral functional differential equations, J. Differential Equations 114 (1994), 527-537.
- [11] R. Precup, Monotone technique to the initial values problem for a delay integral equation from biomathematics, Studia Univ. Babes -Bolyai Math. 40, No. 2 (1995), 63-73.

DEPARTMENT OF APPLIED MATHEMATICS, FACULTY OF MATHEMATICS AND INFORMATICS, UNIVERSITY "BABEŞ-BOLYAI", 3400 CLUJ, ROMANIA E-mail address: r.precup@math.ubbcluj.ro

# ON THE UNIVALENCE OF FUNCTIONS RELATED TO HYPERGEOMETRIC FUNCTIONS

#### IRINEL RADOMIR

Abstract. In lucrare se studiază univalența unei clase de funcții exprimată prin intermediul funcției hipergeometrice.

### 1. Introduction

Let A be the class of function f which are analytic in the unit disk  $U = \{ z \in C : |z| < 1 \}$  with f(0) = 0 and f'(0) = 1. In this note we improve the result from [2] using another univalence criterion.

## 2. Preliminaries

**Theorem 2.1.** ([2]). Let  $f \in A$  and let  $\alpha$  be a complex number,  $Re\alpha > 0$ . If

$$\frac{1 - |z|^{2Re\alpha}}{Re\alpha} \left| \frac{zf''(z)}{f'(z)} \right| \le 1, \qquad (\forall) \ z \in U$$

then for all complex numbers  $\beta$  with  $Re\beta \geq Re\alpha$ , the function

$$F_{\beta}(z) = \left[\beta \int_0^z u^{\beta - 1} f'(u) du\right]^{1/\beta} \tag{2}$$

is analytic and univalent in U.

# 3. Main results

It is easy to prove the following:

**Lemma 3.1.** Let  $\alpha$ ,  $\gamma$  be complex numbers and let the function

$$E(\alpha, \gamma, z, \bar{z}) = \frac{1 - |z|^{2Re\alpha}}{Re\alpha} \left| \gamma \frac{z}{1 - z} \right|, \qquad |z| < 1.$$
 (3)

If  $0 < Re\alpha < 1$ , then

$$E(\alpha, \gamma, z, \bar{z}) \le \frac{|\gamma|}{Re\alpha}, \quad (\forall) z \in U.$$
 (4)

If  $Re\alpha \geq 1$ , then

$$E(\alpha, \gamma, z, \bar{z}) \le 2|\gamma|, \qquad , (\forall)z \in U.$$
 (5)

**Theorem 3.1.** Let  $\alpha$ ,  $\beta$ ,  $\gamma$  be complex numbers. If

$$|\gamma| < Re\alpha < 1 \,, \tag{6}$$

$$|\gamma| \le \frac{1}{2} \quad and \quad Re\alpha \ge 1 \; , \tag{7}$$

$$Re\beta \ge Re\alpha$$
, (8)

then the function

$$F_{\beta}(z) = z \cdot [F(\beta, \gamma, \beta + 1, z)]^{1/\beta}$$
(9)

is analytic and univalent in U, where by F(a,b,c,z) we denoted the hypergeometric function.

*Proof.* If in (2) we make the change u = tz, we obtain

$$F_{\beta}(z) = z \cdot \left[ \beta \int_0^1 t^{\beta - 1} f'(tz) dt \right]^{1/\beta}. \tag{10}$$

In the following we consider the function

$$f(z) = \int_0^z (1 - u)^{-\gamma} du$$
 (11)

For this function we obtain

$$\frac{zf''(z)}{f'(z)} = \gamma \frac{z}{1-z} \text{ and}$$

$$\frac{1-|z|^{2Re\alpha}}{Re\alpha} \left| \frac{zf''(z)}{f'(z)} \right| = \frac{1-|z|^{2Re\alpha}}{Re\alpha} \left| \gamma \frac{z}{1-z} \right|.$$

According to Lemma 3.1 we deduce that the condition (1) from Theorem 2.1, for the function (11) is verified in the cases

(i) 
$$|\gamma| \leq Re\alpha < 1$$
;

(ii) 
$$|\gamma| \leq \frac{1}{2}$$
 and  $Re\alpha \geq 1$ .

Replacing in (10) the function f defined by (11) we obtain

$$F_{\beta}(z) = z \cdot \left[ \beta \int_0^1 t^{\beta - 1} (1 - tz)^{-\gamma} dt \right]^{1/\beta} =$$

$$= z \cdot \left[ F(\beta, \gamma, \beta + 1, z) \right]^{1/\beta}.$$

where by F(a, b, c, z) we noted the hypergeometric function.

## References

- [1] E.Cazacu, N.N.Pascu, On the univalence of functions related to hypergeometric functions, Preprint nr.5(1986), Cluj-Napoca, 25-26.
- [2] N.N.Pascu, An improvement of Becker's univalence criterion, Preprint nr.1(1987), Brasov, 43-48.

DEPARTMENT OF MATHEMATICS, "TRANSILVANIA" UNIVERSITY, BRAŞOV, ROMANIA

## FIBER PICARD OPERATORS THEOREM AND APPLICATIONS

#### IOAN A. RUS

**Abstract**. In this paper we study the following problem: Let  $(X_k, d_k)$ ,  $k = \overline{0, p}$ ,  $p \ge 1$ , be metric spaces and  $A_k : X_0 \times \cdots \times X_k \to X_k$ ,  $k = \overline{0, p}$  be operators. We suppose that

- (a) the operators  $A_k$  are continuous,  $k = \overline{0, p}$ ;
- (b) the operators  $A_0, A_k(x_0, \ldots, x_{k-1}, \cdot), k = \overline{1,p}$  are (weakly) Picard operators. Establish conditions which imply that the operator

$$B_p: X_0 \times \cdots \times X_p \to X_0 \times \cdots \times X_p$$

$$B_p(x_0,\ldots,x_p):=(A_0(x_0),A_1(x_0,x_1),\ldots,A_p(x_0,\ldots,x_p)),$$

is a (weakly) Picard operator.

### 1. Introduction

Let (X,d) be a metric space and  $A:X\to X$  an operator. In this paper we shall use the following notations:

$$P(X) := \{ Y \subset X | Y \neq \emptyset \},$$

$$F_A := \{x \in X | A(x) = x\}$$
 - the fixed point set of A,

$$I(A) := \{ Y \in P(X) | A(Y) \subset Y \}.$$

**Definition 1.1** (Rus [9], [11]). An operator  $A: X \to X$  is weakly Picard operator (WPO) if the sequence

$$(A^n(x))_{n\in\mathbb{N}}$$

converges, for all  $x \in X$ , and the limit (which may depend on x) is a fixed point of A.

<sup>1991</sup> Mathematics Subject Classification. 47H10, 45G15.

**Definition 1.2** (Rus [9], [11]). If A is WPO, then we consider the operator  $A^{\infty}$  defined by

$$A^{\infty}: X \to X, \quad A^{\infty}(x) := \lim_{n \to \infty} A^{n}(x).$$

We remark that,  $A^{\infty}(X) = F_A$ .

**Definition 1.3** (Rus [9], [11]). If A is WPO and  $F_A = \{x^*\}$ , then by definition the operator A is a Picard operator.

Example 1.1. Let (X,d) be a complete metric space and  $A: X \to X$  such that

$$d(A^2(x), A(x)) \le ad(x, A(x))$$

for all  $x \in X$  and for some  $a \in ]0, 1[$ . Then A is weakly Picard operator (see [8], [9], [11]).

Example 1.2. Let (X, d) be a complete metric space and  $A, B: X \to X$  such that

$$d(A(x), B(y)) < a[d(x, A(x)) + d(y, B(y))]$$

for all  $x, y \in X$  for some  $a \in \left]0, \frac{1}{2}\right[$ . Then A and B are Picard operators.

Example 1.3.  $X = C[0, 1], d(x, y) = ||x - y||_C$ ,

$$A(x)(t) = x(0) + \int_0^t K(t, s)x(s)ds, \quad t \in [0, 1]$$

where  $K \in C([0,1] \times [0,1])$ . Then A is WPO.

For other examples see [13], [10], [1], [2], [20],...

We have the following characterization theorem for WPO.

**Theorem 1.1.** Let (X, d) be a metric space and  $A: X \to X$  an WPO. Then there exist  $X_i \in I(A)$ ,  $i \in I$ , such that

(i) 
$$X = \bigcup_{i \in I} X_i$$
,  $X_i \cap X_j = \emptyset$ ,  $i \neq j$ .

(ii) 
$$A \Big|_{X}$$
 is a Picard operator,  $i \in I$ .

*Proof.* Let  $x \in F_A$ . Let  $X_x$  be the domain of attraction of x. It is clear that

$$X = \bigcup_{x \in F_A} X_x$$

is a partition of X and that  $X_x \in I(A)$ . By the definition of  $X_x$ , we have that

$$F_A \cap X_x = \{x\}.$$

In this paper we study the following problem:

Problem 1.1. Let (X, d) and  $(Y, \rho)$  be the metric spaces and  $A = (B, C) : X \times Y \to X \times Y$  a triangular operator, i.e.

$$A(x,y) = (B(x), C(x,y)), \quad x \in X, \quad y \in Y.$$

We suppose that the operators  $B:X\to X,\ C(x,\cdot):Y\to Y,\ x\in X,$  are Picard operators. Establish conditions which imply that the operator A is Picard operator.

If the operators,  $B: X \to X$ ,  $C(x, \cdot): Y \to Y$ ,  $x \in X$ , are WPO, establish conditions which imply that the operator A is WPO.

# 2. Fiber Picard operators theorem

The following result is given by M.W. Hirsch and C.C. Pugh ([5], 1970):

**Theorem 2.1** (Fiber contraction theorem). Let (X,d) be a metric space and  $B: X \to X$  be an operator having an attractive fixed point  $p \in X$ . Let  $(Y,\rho)$  be a metric space and  $C: X \times Y \to Y$  an operator such that

- (i) there exists  $\lambda \in [0, 1[$ , such that the operator  $C(x, \cdot)$  is a  $\lambda$ -contraction for all  $x \in X$ ;
  - (ii) the operator  $A: X \times Y \to X \times Y$ , A(x, y) := (B(x), C(x, y)) is continuous. Let  $q \in Y$  be a fixed point for  $C(p, \cdot)$ .

Then (p,q) is an attractive fixed point for A.

For some generalization of this theorem see [10]-[15], [18] and [19].

We have

**Theorem 2.2.** Let (X, d) and  $(Y, \rho)$  be two metric space and A = (B, C) a triangular operator. We suppose that

- (i)  $(Y, \rho)$  is a complete metric space;
- (ii) the operator  $B: X \to X$  is WPO;
- (iii) there exists  $\alpha \in [0, 1[$ , such that  $C(x, \cdot)$  is an  $\alpha$ -contraction, for all  $x \in X$ ;
- (iv) if  $(x^*, y^*) \in F_A$ , then  $C(\cdot, y^*)$  is continuous in  $x^*$ .

Then the operator A is WPO.

If B is Picard operator, then A is Picard operator.

*Proof.* Let  $(x,y) \in X \times Y$ . Let  $y^*$  the unique fixed point of  $C(B^{\infty}(x),\cdot)$ . We shall prove that  $A^n(x,y) \to (B^{\infty}(x),y^*)$  as  $n \to \infty$ . Let  $A^n(x,y) = (x_n,y_n)$ . Then

$$x_n = B^n(x), \quad y_n = C(x_{n-1}, y_{n-1}).$$

The proof that  $y_n \to y^*$  as  $n \to \infty$  is similarly with the proof given in [5] for the Theorem 1.

Remark 2.1. The proof that  $y_n \to y^*$  as  $n \to \infty$  follows, also, from the following **Lemma 2.1** (see [13]). Let (X,d) be a complete metric space and  $A_n, A: X \to X$ ,  $n \in N$ , some operators. We suppose that

- (a) the sequence  $(A_n)_{n\in\mathbb{N}}$  pointiwse converges to A;
- (b) there exist  $\alpha \in [0,1[$  such that the operators  $A_n$  and  $A, n \in N$ , are  $\alpha$ -contractions.

Then the sequence  $(A_n \circ A_{n-1} \circ \cdots \circ A_0)_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$  poinwise converges to  $A^{\infty}$ . Remark 2.2. In the proof of Lemma 2.2 on uses the following

**Lemma 2.2** (see [13], [14] and [15]). Let  $a_n, b_n \in R_+, n \in N$ . We suppose that

(a) 
$$a_n \to 0$$
 as  $n \to \infty$ ;

$$(b) \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} b_k < +\infty.$$
Then

$$\sum_{k=0}^{n} a_k b_{n-k} \to 0 \text{ as } n \to \infty.$$

Remark 2.3. For to have a generalization of the Theorem 2.2, we need suitable generalization for Lemma 2.1 and Lemma 2.2. For some generalization of these Lemmas, see [15] and [19].

Remark 2.4. By induction, from the Theorem 2.2 we have

**Theorem 2.3** (see [13]). Let  $(X_k, d_k)$ ,  $k = \overline{0, p}$ ,  $p \ge 1$ , be some metric spaces. Let

$$A_k: X_0 \times \cdots \times X_k \to X_k, \quad k = \overline{0, p}$$

be some operators. We suppose that:

(a) the spaces  $(X_k, d_k)$ ,  $k = \overline{1, p}$  are complete metric spaces;

- (b) the operator  $A_0$  is WPO;
- (c) there exist  $\alpha_k \in [0, 1[$  such that the operators  $A_k(x_0, \ldots, x_{k-1}, \cdot)$  are  $\alpha_k$ -contractions;
- (d) if  $(x_0^*,\ldots,x_p^*)\in F_{B_p}$ ,  $B_p=(A_0,\ldots,A_p)$ , then the operators  $A_k(\cdot,\ldots,\cdot,x_k^*)$ ,

 $k = \overline{1,p}$ , are continuous in  $(x_0^*, x_1^*, \ldots, x_{k-1}^*)$ .

Then the operator  $B_p$  is WPO.

Remark 2.5. The next conjecture is in connection with our results.

**Discrete Markus-Yamabe Conjecture** (see [3], [6], [1]). Let A be a  $C^1$  function from  $R^n$  into itself such that A(0) = 0 and for any  $x \in R^n$ , JA(x) (the Jacobian matrix of A at x) has all its eigenvalues with modulus less than one. Then A is a Picard function.

From the fiber Picard operators theorem we have

**Theorem 2.4.** Let  $A: \mathbb{R}^n \to \mathbb{R}^n$  be a  $\mathbb{C}^1$  triangular function,  $A = (A_1, \ldots, A_n)$ .

If there exists  $\alpha \in ]0,1[$  such that

$$\left| \frac{\partial A_i}{\partial x_i} \right| \leq \alpha, \quad i = \overline{1, n}.$$

Then the function A is Picard function.

A. Cima, A. Gasull, F. Mañosas prove that the Discrete Markus-Yamabe Conjecture ([3], 1999) is a theorem for A provided

$$\left| \frac{\partial A_i}{\partial x_j} \right| < 1, \quad j = \overline{1, i}, \quad i = \overline{1, n}.$$

## 3. Applications

The fiber Picard operators theorem is very useful for proving solutions of operatorial equations to be differentiable with respect to parameters (see [17], [12], [13], [14], [15], [20], [18]). For example:

 (J. Sotomayor) differentiability with respect to initial data for the solution of differential equations

$$x' = f(t, x), \quad x(t_0) = x_0, \quad f: \Omega \to \mathbb{R}^n, \quad \Omega \subset \mathbb{R}^{n+1};$$

• (1.A. Rus [12]) differentiability with respect to  $\lambda$  for the solution of the integral equation

$$x(t) = 1 + \lambda \int_{t}^{1} x(s)x(s-t)ds, \quad t \in [0,1],$$

where  $\lambda \in R$ ;

 (A. Tămăşan) differentiability with respect to lag function for pantograph equation

$$x(t) = f(t), x(t), x(\lambda t), t > 0; 0 < \lambda < 1, x(0) = 0.$$

In what follow we apply the fiber Picard operators theorem to study the following integral equations modelling population growth in a periodic environment (see [10], [7])

$$x(t) = \int_{t=0}^{t} f(s, x(s); \lambda) ds$$
 (1)

where  $f \in C(R \times [\alpha, \beta] \times J, [m, M],$  with  $\tau, \alpha, \beta, m, M \in R_+^*$  and  $J \subset R$  a compact interval.

Let

$$X_{\omega} := \{ x \in C(R \times J, [\alpha, \beta]) | \ x(t + \omega, \lambda) = x(t, \lambda),$$
 for all  $t \in R, \ \lambda \in J \}, \ \omega > 0.$ 

We consider on  $X_{\omega}$  the metric  $d(x,y) := ||x-y||_C$ . We have

Theorem 3.1. We suppose that

(a) 
$$0 < m < M$$
,  $0 < \alpha < \beta$ ;  $\alpha < m\tau$ ,  $\beta > M\tau$ ;

(b) 
$$m \leq f(t, u; \lambda) \leq M$$
, for  $t \in R$ ,  $u \in [\alpha, \beta]$ ,  $\lambda \in J$ ;

(c) 
$$f(t + \omega, u; \lambda) = f(t, u; \lambda), t \in R, u \in [\alpha, \beta], \lambda \in J;$$

(d) there exists l(t), such that

$$|f(t, u; \lambda) - f(t, v; \lambda)| \le l(t)|u - v|$$

for all  $t \in R$ ,  $u, v \in [\alpha, \beta]$ ;

(e) there exists  $q \in ]0,1[$  such that

$$\int_{t-\tau}^{t} l(s)ds \le q, \text{ for all } t \in R.$$

Then

- (i) the equation (1) has in  $X_{\omega}$  a unique solution  $x^*$ ;
- (ii) for all  $x_0 \in X_{\omega}$ , the sequence defined by

$$x_{n+1}(t,\lambda) = \int_{t-\tau}^{t} f(s,x_n(s,\lambda)) ds$$

converges uniformly to  $x^*$ ;

(iii) if 
$$f(t,\cdot,\cdot) \in C^1$$
, then  $x^*(t,\cdot) \in C^1(J)$ .

Proof. (i)+(ii). We consider the operator

$$B:X_{\omega} o C(R imes J), \quad B(x)(t,\lambda):=\int_{t- au}^t f(s,x(s,\lambda))ds.$$

From (a) and (c) we have that  $X_{\omega} \in I(B)$ . From (d) it follows that B is a contraction.

By the contraction principle we have that B is a Picard operator.

(iii). Let we prove that there exists  $\frac{\partial x^*}{\partial \lambda}$  and  $\frac{\partial x^*}{\partial \lambda} \in C(R \times J)$ .

If we suppose that there exists  $\frac{\partial x^*}{\partial \lambda}$ , then from

$$x(t,\lambda) = \int_{t-\tau}^{t} f(s,x(s,\lambda);\lambda)ds$$

we have

$$\frac{\partial x(t,\lambda)}{\partial \lambda} = \int_{t-\tau}^{t} \frac{\partial f(s,x(s,\lambda);\lambda)}{\partial x} \cdot \frac{\partial x(s,\lambda)}{\partial \lambda} ds + \int_{t-\tau}^{t} \frac{\partial f(s,x(s,\lambda);\lambda)}{\partial \lambda} ds.$$

This relation suggest us to consider the following operator

$$A: X_{\omega} \times Y_{\omega} \to X_{\omega} \times Y_{\omega}$$

defined by

$$A = (B, C), \quad A(x, y) = (B(x), C(x, y)),$$

where

$$C(x,y)(t,\lambda) := \int_{t-\tau}^{t} \frac{\partial f(s,x(s,\lambda);\lambda)}{\partial x} y(s,\lambda) ds + \int_{t-\tau}^{t} \frac{\partial f(s,x(s,\lambda);\lambda)}{\partial \lambda} ds$$

and 
$$Y_{\omega} := \{ y \in C(R \times J) | y(t + \omega, \lambda) = y(t, \lambda), t \in R, \lambda \in J \}.$$

Now we are in the condition of the fiber Picard operators theorem. From this theorem, the operator A is a Picard operator and the sequences

$$x_{n+1} = B(x_n)$$

and

$$y_{n+1} = C(x_n, y_n)$$

converge uniformly to  $(x^*, y^*) \in F_A$ , for all  $x_0 \in X_\omega$ ,  $y_0 \in Y_\omega$ .

If we take  $x_0 \in X_{\omega}$ ,  $y_0 \in Y_{\omega}$  such that  $y_0 = \frac{\partial x_0}{\partial \lambda}$ , then we have that  $y_n = \frac{\partial x_n}{\partial \lambda}$ , for all  $n \in N$ .

So

$$x_n \xrightarrow{unif} x^* \text{ as } n \to \infty,$$

$$\frac{\partial x_n}{\partial \lambda} \xrightarrow{unif} y^* \text{ as } n \to \infty.$$

Using a Weierstrass argument we conclude that  $x^*$  is differentiable and  $y^* = \frac{\partial x^*}{\partial \lambda}$ .

## References

- [1] G.R. Belitskii, Yu.I. Lyubich, Matrix Norms and their Applications, Birkhäuser, Basel, 1988.
- [2] A. Buică, Old and new Gronwall-type inequalities as consequences of an abstract lemma of Rus (to appear).
- [3] A. Cima, A. Gasul, F. Mañosas, The discrete Markus-Yamabe problem, Nonlinear Analysis, 35(1999), 343-354.
- [4] A. Domokos, On the continuity and differentiability of the implicit functions, Studia Univ. Babes-Bolyai (to appear).
- [5] M.W. Hirsch, C.C. Pugh, Stable manifolds and hyperbolic sets, Proceed. of Symposia in pure mathematics, 14(1970), A.M.S., 1970, 133-143.
- [6] G. Meisters, A biography of the Markus-Yamabe conjecture, presented at the conference Aspects of Mathematics-Algebra, Geometry and Several Complex Variables, held June 10-13, 1996, at the University Hong Kong.
- [7] R. Precup, E. Kirr, Analysis of a nonlinear integral equation modelling infections diseases, Proc. Int. Conf., Timisoara, 1997, 178-195.
- [8] I.A. Rus, Metrical fixed point theorems, Univ. of Cluj-Napoca, 1979.
- [9] I.A. Rus, Generalized contractions, Seminar on Fixed Point Theory, Cluj-Napoca, 1983.
- [10] I.A. Rus, A delay integral equation from biomathematics, Seminar on Diff. Eq., Babes-Bolyai Univ., Cluj-Napoca, 1989, 87-90.
- [11] I.A. Rus, Weakly Picard mappings, Comment. Math. Univ. Caroline, 34, 4(1993), 769-773.
- [12] I.A. Rus, An abstract point of view for some integral equations from applied mathematics, Proc. Int. Conf. on Analysis and Numerical Computation, Univ. of Timişoara, 1997, 256-270.
- [13] I.A. Rus, Fiber Picard operators and applications, Novi Sad J. Math. (to appear).

#### FIBER PICARD OPERATORS THEOREM AND APPLICATIONS

- [14] I.A. Rus, A Fiber generalized contraction theorem and applications, Mathematica (to appear).
- [15] I.A. Rus, Fiber Picard operator on generalized metric spaces and application, Scripta Scientiarum (to appear).
- [16] S. Smale, Mathematical problems for the next century, Math. Intelligencer, 20(1998), Nr.2, 7-15.
- [17] J. Sotomayor, Smooth dependence of solutions of differential equations on initial data: a simple proof, Bol. Soc. Bras. Mat., 4(1973), 55-59.
- [18] A. Tămăşan, Differentiability with respect to lag function for nonlinear pantograph equations (to appear).
- [19] M. Serban, Fiber  $\varphi$ -contraction theorem (to appear).
- [20] P. Ver Eecke, Application du calcul différentiel, Presses Univ. de France, Paris, 1985.

DEPARTMENT OF APPLIED MATHEMATICS, FACULTY OF MATHEMATICS AND INFORMATICS, UNIVERSITY "BABEŞ-BOLYAI", 3400 CLUJ, ROMANIA

# FIBER $\varphi$ -CONTRACTIONS

### MARCEL-ADRIAN SERBAN

Abstract. This paper containes some conditions for proving that if an operator is fiber Picard operator then this operator is Picard operator. The result obtained is used for proving the differentiability with respect some parameters.

## 1. Introduction

Let X be a nonempty set and  $A: X \to X$  an operator. We note by:

$$P(X) := \{ Y \subset X \mid Y \neq \emptyset \}$$

 $F_A := \{x \in X | A(x) = x\}$  - the fixed point set of A.

**Definition 1.1.** (I.A. Rus [6]). Let (X,d) be a metric space. An operator  $A: X \to X$  is (uniformly) Picard operator if there exists  $x^* \in X$  such that:

- (a)  $F_A = \{x^*\},$
- (b) the sequence  $(A^n(x))_{n\in N}$  converges (uniformly) to  $x^*$ , for all  $x\in X$ .

**Definition 1.2.** (I.A. Rus [6]). Let (X,d) be a metric space. An operator  $A: X \to X$  is (uniformly) weakly Picard operator if:

- (a) the sequence  $(A^n(x))_{n\in\mathbb{N}}$  converges (uniformly), for all  $x\in X$ ,
- (b) the limit (which may depend on x) is a fixed point of A.

If A is weakly Picard operator then we consider the following operator:

$$A^{\infty}: X \to X$$

$$A^{\infty}(x) = \lim_{n \to \infty} A^n(x).$$

<sup>1991</sup> Mathematics Subject Classification. 47H10.

Key words and phrases. Picard operators, fiber Picard operators, comparison function, (c)-comparison function, fixed point,  $\varphi$ -contraction.

In this paper we consider the following class of operators:

$$A: X_1 \times ... \times X_p \to X_1 \times ... \times X_p$$
 
$$(x_1, ..., x_p) \mapsto (A_1(x_1), A_2(x_1, x_2), ..., A_p(x_1, ..., x_p)),$$

where  $(X_1, d_i)$ ,  $i = \overline{1, p}$ , are metrical spaces and  $A_k : X_1 \times ... \times X_k \to X_k$ ,  $k = \overline{1, p}$ , are such that the operators

$$A_k(x_1,...,x_{k-1},\cdot):X_k\to X_k$$

are weakly Picard operators, for all  $x_i \in X_i$ ,  $i = \overline{1, k}$ ,  $k = \overline{1, p}$ .

The aim of this paper is to give an answer of Problem 4.2 from I. A. Rus [5]. We replace the condition that  $A_k(x_1,...,x_{k-1},\cdot)$  is  $\alpha$ -contraction with  $A_k(x_1,...,x_{k-1},\cdot)$  is  $\varphi_k$ -contraction and we give the conditions for  $\varphi_k$  to obtain that operator  $\Lambda$  is a Picard operator.

# 2. Comparison functions and (c)-comparison function

**Definition 2.1.**(I.A. Rus [5]). A function  $\varphi : \Re_+ \to \Re_+$  is called comparison function if:

- (a)  $\varphi$  is monotone increasing:  $t_1 \leq t_1 \Longrightarrow \varphi(t_1) \leq \varphi(t_2)$ ,  $t_1, t_1 \in \Re_+$ .
- (b)  $(\varphi^n(t))_{n\in\mathbb{N}}$  converges to 0, as  $n\to\infty$ , for each t.

We are interested in finding that comparison functions which satisfies the condition:

$$\sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \varphi^k(t) < \infty. \tag{1}$$

V. Berinde in [2] gave a necessary and sufficient result for the convergence of the series of decreasing positive terms.

**Theorem 2.1.**(V. Berinde [2]). A series  $\sum_{k=0}^{\infty} u_k$  of decreasing positive terms converges if and only if there exists a convergent series of nonnegative terms  $\sum_{k=0}^{\infty} v_k$  such that:

$$\frac{u_{n+1}}{u_n + v_n} \le \alpha < 1, for \quad n \ge n_0, \tag{2}$$

is satisfied.

Using this result we obtain which comparison functions satisfy the condition (1).

Corollary 2.1.(V. Berinde [3]) Let  $\varphi : \Re_+ \to \Re_+$  be a comparison function. The series  $\sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \varphi^k(t)$ ,  $t \in \Re_+$ , is convergent if and only if there exists a number  $\alpha$ ,  $0 < \alpha < 1$ , and there exists a convergent series of nonnegative terms  $\sum_{k=0}^{\infty} v_k$  such that:

$$\frac{\varphi^{k+1}(t)}{\varphi^k(t) + v_k} \le \alpha \le 1, \quad \text{for} \quad k \ge k_0. \tag{3}$$

Remark 2.1. If  $\sum_{i=0}^{\infty} v_i$  is a convergent series of nonnegative terms and  $0 < \alpha$  then also  $\sum_{i=0}^{\infty} \alpha v_i$  is a convergent series of nonnegative terms, so we can write the condition (3) in equivalent form:

$$\varphi^{k+1}(t) < \alpha \varphi^k(t) + v_k', \tag{4}$$

where  $0 < \alpha < 1$ ,  $\sum_{k=0}^{\infty} v'_k$  is a convergent series of nonnegative terms.

By Corollary 2.1 and Remark 2.1 we obtain a new class of comparison functions.

**Definition 2.2.**(V. Berinde [1], [2]) A function  $\varphi : \Re_+ \to \Re_+$  is called (c)-comparison function if the following condition hold:

- (a)  $\varphi$  is monotone increasing:  $t_1 \leq t_1 \Longrightarrow \varphi(t_1) \leq \varphi(t_2)$ ,  $t_1, t_1 \in \Re_+$ .
- (b) there exist two numbers  $k_0$ ,  $\alpha$ ,  $0 < \alpha < 1$ , and a convergent series of nonnegative terms  $\sum_{k=0}^{\infty} v_k$  such that:

$$\varphi^{k+1}(t) \le \alpha \varphi^k(t) + v_k$$

for each t and  $k \geq k_0$ .

**Theorem 2.2.** (V. Berinde [1], [3]) If  $\varphi : \Re_+ \to \Re_+$  is a (c)-comparison function then:

- (i)  $\varphi(t) < t$ , for each t > 0;
- (ii)  $\varphi$  is continuous in 0;
- (iii) the series  $\sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \varphi^k(t)$  converges for each  $t \in \Re_+$ ;
- (iv) the sum of the series (1), s(t), is monotone increasing and continuous in 0;



(v)  $(\varphi^n(t))_{n\in\mathbb{N}}$  converges to 0, as  $n\to\infty$ , for each t.

Example 2.1. The function  $\varphi: \Re_+ \to \Re_+$ ,  $\varphi(t) = \frac{t}{t+1}$  is a comparison function, but is not a (c)-comparison function.

Example 2.2. The function  $\varphi: \Re_+ \to \Re_+$ ,  $\varphi(t) = \alpha t$ ,  $0 < \alpha < 1$ , is a (c)-comparison function.

Example 2.3. The function  $\varphi: \Re_+ \to \Re_+$ ,

$$arphi(t)=\left\{egin{array}{ll} at & t\in[0;2a] \ bt+c & t>2a \end{array}
ight.$$
 , where  $0\leq a<1,\,a-rac{c}{2a}\leq b\leq 1$  and  $c<0$  is a

comparison function.

Example 2.4. For the function from Example 2.3, if  $a = \frac{1}{2}$ , b = 1,  $c = -\frac{1}{3}$ , we obtain a (c)-comparison function.

**Definition 2.3.** (I.A. Rus [8]) Let (X,d) be a metric space and  $\varphi : \Re_+ \to \Re_+$  is a comparison function. A mapping  $f: X \to X$  is a  $\varphi$ -contraction if:

$$d(f(x), f(y)) \le \varphi(d(x, y)),$$

for every  $x, y \in X$ .

# 3. Fiber Picard operators problem

We'll start with a result which generalize Lemma 3.2 from I.A. Rus [5]. Lemma 3.1.Let  $\alpha_n \in \Re_+$ ,  $n \in N$ , and  $\varphi : \Re_+ \to \Re_+$  such that:

(i) 
$$\alpha_n \to 0$$
 as  $n \to \infty$ ;

(ii)  $\varphi$  is a (c)-comparison function.

Then 
$$\sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \varphi^{n-k}(\alpha_k) \to 0$$
 as  $n \to \infty$ .

Proof. We split the partial sum of the series in two parts:

$$s_n = \sum_{k=0}^n \varphi^{n-k}(\alpha_k) = \sum_{k=0}^{\left[\frac{n}{2}\right]} \varphi^{n-k}(\alpha_k) + \sum_{k=\left[\frac{n}{2}\right]+1}^n \varphi^{n-k}(\alpha_k).$$

For the first part of partial sum we have:

$$\sum_{k=0}^{\left[\frac{n}{2}\right]} \varphi^{n-k}(\alpha_k) \le \sum_{k=0}^{\left[\frac{n}{2}\right]} \varphi^{n-k}(\max_{n \in N} \alpha_k) \to 0$$

as  $n \to \infty$ , because of the fact that  $\varphi$  is a (c)-comparison function and the point (iii) from Theorem 2.2.

For the second part of the partial sum we have:

$$\sum_{k=\left[\frac{n}{2}\right]+1}^{n} \varphi^{n-k}(\alpha_k) \leq \sum_{k=\left[\frac{n}{2}\right]+1}^{n} \varphi^{n-k}(\max_{j\leq n} \alpha_j) \leq s(\max_{j\leq n} \alpha_j).$$

Using the continuity of s in 0, (Theorem 2.2, (iv)), and the fact that  $\max_{j \le n} \alpha_j \to 0$  as  $n \to \infty$  we deduce that the second part also tends to 0 as  $n \to \infty$ .

Considering the open problem 3.1 from I.A. Rus [5], we'll give the following result: Lemma 3.2.Let (X,d) be a complete metric space,  $\varphi: \Re_+ \to \Re_+$  a (c)-comparison function and  $A_n$ ,  $A: X \to X$ ,  $n \in \mathbb{N}$ , operators such that:

- (i)  $\varphi$  is subadditive:  $\varphi(t_1 + t_2) \leq \varphi(t_1) + \varphi(t_2)$ ,  $\forall t_1, t_2 \in \Re_+$ ;
- (ii) the sequence  $(A_n)_{n\in\mathbb{N}}$  pointwise converges to A;
- (iii)  $A_n$  and A,  $n \in N$ , are  $\varphi$ -contractions.

Then the sequence  $(A_n \circ A_{n-1} \circ ... \circ A_0)_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$  pointwise converges to  $A^{\infty}$ .

*Proof.* From (iii) we deduce that there exists a unique  $x^* \in F_A$ , so  $A^{\infty}(x) = x^*$ , for all  $x \in X$ . Let  $x \in X$ . We have:

$$d((A_{n} \circ A_{n-1} \circ \cdots \circ A_{0})(x), x^{*}) \leq$$

$$\leq d((A_{n} \circ A_{n-1} \circ \cdots \circ A_{0})(x), (A_{n} \circ A_{n-1} \circ \cdots \circ A_{0})(x^{*})) +$$

$$+ d((A_{n} \circ A_{n-1} \circ \cdots \circ A_{0})(x^{*}), A_{n}(x^{*})) + d(A_{n}(x^{*}), x^{*}) \leq \cdots \leq$$

$$\leq \varphi^{n+1}(d(x, x^{*})) + \varphi^{n}(d(A_{0}(x^{*}), x^{*})) + \varphi^{n-1}(d(A_{1}(x^{*}), x^{*})) + \cdots + d(A_{n}(x^{*}), x^{*}).$$

Let  $\alpha_k := d(A_k(x^*), x^*)$ . It is obvious that  $\alpha_k \to 0$  as  $k \to \infty$  and the proof of the theorem follows from Lemma 3.1.

**Lemma 3.3.**Let (X,d) and  $(Y,\rho)$  be two metric spaces,  $x_n, x^* \in X$ ,  $\varphi : \Re_+ \to \Re_+$  a (c)-comparison function and  $f : X \times Y \to Y$  an operator such that:

- (i)  $x_n \to x^* as \ n \to \infty$ ;
- (ii)  $\varphi$  is subadditive;
- (iii) the operator  $f(\cdot,y): X \to X$  is continuous for all  $y \in Y$ ;

- (iv)  $f(x, \cdot): Y \to Y$  is  $\varphi$ -contraction for all  $x \in X$ ;
- (v)  $(Y,\rho)$  is a complete metric space.

Then the sequence defined by:  $y_{n+1} = f(x_n, y_n)$ ,  $y_1 = y$ ,  $n \in \mathbb{N}$  converges to  $y^*$ , the unique fixed point of  $f(x^*, \cdot)$ , for all  $y \in Y$ .

*Proof.* The proof is a simple application of Lemma 3.3 with  $A_n: Y \to Y$ ,  $A_n(y) = f(x_n, y)$ ,  $A: Y \to Y$ ,  $A(y) = f(x^*, y)$ .

The main result of this paper is related to the open problem 4.1, (I.A. Rus [5]). This result is an answer of open problem 4.2, (I.A. Rus [5]), which generalize the Theorem 4.1.

**Theorem 3.1.** Let  $(X_k, d_k)$ ,  $k = \overline{0, p}$ ,  $p \ge 1$ , be some metric spaces. Let

$$A_k: X_0 \times ... \times X_k \to X_k, \qquad k = \overline{0, p},$$

be some operators such that:

- (i) the spaces  $(X_k, d_k)$ ,  $k = \overline{1, p}$ , are complete metric spaces;
- (ii) the operator  $A_0$  is (weakly) Picard operator;
- (iii) there exist  $\varphi_k : \Re_+ \to \Re_+$  subadditive (c)-comparison functions such that the operators  $A_k(x_0, ..., x_{k-1}, \cdot)$  are  $\varphi_k$ -contractions,  $k = \overline{1, p}$ ;
- (iv) the operators  $A_k$  are continuous with respect to  $(x_0, ..., x_{k-1})$  for all  $x_k \in X_k$ ,  $k = \overline{1, p}$ .

Then the operator  $B_p = (A_0, ..., A_p)$  is (weakly) Picard operator. Moreover if  $A_0$  is a Picard operator and

$$F_{A_0} = \{x_0^{\star}\}, \qquad F_{A_1(x_0^{\star}, \cdot)} = \{x_1^{\star}\}, ..., F_{A_p(x_0^{\star}, ..., x_{p-1}^{\star}, \cdot)} = \{x_p^{\star}\}$$

then

$$F_{B_p} = \{(x_1^*, x_2^*, ..., x_p^*).$$

*Proof.* We prove this theorem by induction respect to  $p \in N^*$ . First we consider the case of p = 1.

Let  $x_0 \in X_0$  and  $x_1 \in X_1$ . We show that

$$B_1^n(x_0,x_1) \to (A_0^\infty(x_0),x_1^*(x_0))$$

as  $n \to \infty$ , where  $x_1^*(x_0)$  is a unique fixed point of  $A_1(A_0^{\infty}(x_0), \cdot)$  It si easy to check that

$$B_1^n(x_0, x_1) = (A_0^n(x_0), y_n),$$

where  $y_0 = x_1$ ,  $y_1 = A_1(x_0, y_0)$ , ...,  $y_{n+1} = A_1(A_0^n(x_0), y_n)$ , ...

Using again Lemma 3.3 we obtain the proof in the case p = 1.

Now we suppose that the statement of the theorem is true for the  $p \leq k$  and we prove the theorem for the p = k + 1. We remark that  $B_{k+1} = (B_k, A_{k+1})$ , where  $B_k$  is (weakly) Picard operator, so we are in the case p = 1 and thus the proof is complete.

Remark 3.1. The Lemma 3.2, Lemma 3.3, Theorem 4.1 from I.A. Rus [5] can be obtained using  $\varphi$  as in Example 2.2.

# 4. Application

We consider the following integral equation:

$$x(t) = g(t) + \lambda \cdot \int_{a}^{b} K(t, s, x(s)) ds, \qquad t \in [a; b].$$
 (5)

Theorem 4.1. Suppose that the following conditions hold:

- (i)  $a \in C[a;b], K \in C([a;b] \times [a;b] \times \Re);$
- (ii) there exists  $L_K > 0$  such that:  $|K(t, s, u) K(t, s, v)| \le L_k |u v|$ , for all  $t, s \in [a; b], u, v \in \Re$ ;
- (iii)  $\lambda_0 L_K(b-a) < 1$ , where  $\lambda_0 \in \Re^*_+$ .

Then

(a) the equation (5) has a unique solution  $x^*(\cdot, \lambda)$  in C([a; b]), for all  $\lambda \in [-\lambda_0; \lambda_0]$ ;

(b) for all  $x_0 \in C([a; b])$  the sequence  $(x_n)_{n \in N}$  defined by

$$x_{n+1}(t;\lambda) = g(t) + \lambda \cdot \int_{a}^{b} K(t,s,x_n(s))ds,$$

converges uniformly to  $x^*$ , for all  $t, s \in [a; b], \lambda \in [-\lambda_0; \lambda_0]$ ;

(c) we have the estimation:

$$||x_n - x^*||_C \le \frac{\alpha^n}{1 - \alpha} \cdot ||x_1 - x_0||_C$$

where  $\alpha = \lambda_0 L_K (b - a)$ ;

- (d) the function  $x^*: [a; b] \times [-\lambda_0: \lambda_0] \to \Re(t, \lambda) \longmapsto x^*(t; \lambda)$  is continuous;
- (e) if  $K(t, s, \cdot) \in C^1(\Re)$ , for all  $t, s \in [a; b]$ , then

$$x^*(t;\cdot) \in C^1([-\lambda_0;\lambda_0])$$

for all  $t \in [a; b]$ .

*Proof.* We consider the Banach space  $X := (C([a;b] \times [-\lambda_0; \lambda_0]), ||\cdot||_C)$ , where  $||\cdot||_C$  is Chebyshev norm, and the operator defined by

$$A_0: X \to X,$$
  $A_0(x)(t; \lambda) = g(t) + \lambda \cdot \int_a^b K(t, s, x(s; \lambda)) ds,$ 

for all  $t, s \in [a; b], \lambda \in [-\lambda_0; \lambda_0]$ .

Using (ii) we obtain:

$$||A_0(x) - A_0(y)||_C \le \lambda_0 L_K (b-a) \cdot ||x-y||_C$$
 (6)

for all  $x, y \in X$ , so  $A_0$  is a  $\varphi$ -contraction, where  $\varphi(t) = \alpha t$  is a (c)-comparison function because of (iii). From Theorem 3, (V. Berinde, [2]) we conclude (a), (b), (c), (d).

We'll prove that there exists  $\frac{\partial x^*}{\partial \lambda}$ . If we formally derivate the relation (5) respect to  $\lambda$  we obtain:

$$\frac{\partial x(t;\lambda)}{\partial \lambda} = \int_{a}^{b} K(t,s,x(s;\lambda))ds + \lambda \cdot \int_{a}^{b} \frac{\partial K(t,s,x(s;\lambda))}{\partial \lambda} \cdot \frac{x(s;\lambda)}{\partial \lambda} ds.$$

This relation sugest to consider the following operator:

$$A_1: X \times X \to X$$

$$A_1(x,y)(t;\lambda) = \int_a^b K(t,s,x(s;\lambda))ds + \lambda \cdot \int_a^b \frac{\partial K(t,s,x(s;\lambda))}{\partial \lambda} \cdot y(s;\lambda)ds.$$

We estimate that:

$$||A_1(x,y_1)-A_1(x,y_2)||_C \leq \lambda_0 L_K(b-a) \cdot ||y_1-y_2||_C$$

for all  $x \in X$ . If we take the operator

$$B: X \times X \to X \times X, \qquad B = (A_0, A_1)$$

then we are in the conditions of Theorem 3.1, thus B is a Picard operator and the sequences

$$x_{n+1}(t;\lambda) := g(t) + \lambda \cdot \int_{a}^{b} K(t,s,x_{n}(s))ds$$

$$y_{n+1}(t;\lambda) := \int_{a}^{b} K(t,s,x_{n}(s;\lambda))ds + \lambda \cdot \int_{a}^{b} \frac{\partial K(t,s,x_{n}(s;\lambda))}{\partial \lambda} \cdot y_{n}(s;\lambda)ds$$

converges uniformly (with respect to  $t \in [a;b]$ ,  $\lambda \in [-\lambda_0;\lambda_0]$ ) to  $(x^*,y^*) \in F_B$ , for all  $x_0,y_0 \in X$ . But for fixed  $x_0,y_0 \in X$  we have that  $y_1 = \frac{\partial x_1}{\partial \lambda}$  and by induction we prove that  $y_n = \frac{\partial x_n}{\partial \lambda}$ , so we have:

$$x_n \stackrel{unif.}{\to} x^* \quad \text{as} \quad n \to \infty$$

$$\frac{\partial x_n}{\partial \lambda} \stackrel{unif.}{\to} y^*$$

as  $n \to \infty$ .

These imply that there exists 
$$\frac{\partial x^*}{\partial \lambda}$$
 and  $\frac{\partial x^*}{\partial \lambda} = y^*$ .

Remark 4.1.If  $K(t, s, \cdot) \in C^m(\Re)$  then  $x^*(t; \cdot) \in C^m([-\lambda_0; \lambda_0])$ .

Remark 4.2. For other examples of integral equations where Theorem 3.1 is used see I. A. Rus [4], [5], M. A. Şerban [9].

# References

- [1] V. Berinde, Error estimates for a class of  $(\delta, \varphi)$ -contractions, Preprint Nr.3, 1994, 3-9.
- [2] V.Berinde, Error estimates in the approximation of the fixed points for the class of φ-contractions, Studia Univ. "Babes-Bolyai", Mathematica, XXXV, 2, 1990, 86-89.
- [3] V. Berinde, Generalized contraction and applications (Romanian), Ph. D. Thesis, Univ. "Babes-Bolyai" Cluj-Napoca, 1993.
- [4] I. A. Rus, An abstract point of view for some integral equations from applied mathematics, Proceed. Int. Conf., Timisoara, 1997, 256-270.
- [5] I. A. Rus, Fiber Picard operators and applications, Mathematica, Cluj-Napoca, 1999.
- [6] I. A. Rus, Picard operators and applications, "Babes-Bolyai" Univ., Clui-Napoca, 1996.
- [7] I. A. Rus, Generalized φ-contraction, Mathematica, 24(1982), 175-178.
- [8] I. A. Rus, Generalized contraction, Preprint Nr.3, 1983, 1-130.
- [9] M. A. Şerban, Existence and uniqueness theorems for the Chandrasekhar's equation, to appear in Mathematica, Cluj-Napoca.

"Babeş-Bolyai" University, str. Kogălniceanu, nr. 1, 3400 Cluj-Napoca E-mail address: mserban@math.ubbcluj.ro

## SOME APPROXIMATION IDEALS

#### NICOLAE TITA

**Abstract.** We consider some approximation ideals of operators on operator spaces. The method used is similar to that from [8], [10], [11], in the case of the classical Banach spaces, or [2], [7] for the case of Hilbert spaces.

## 1. Introduction

The theory of the approximation ideals is well known for the case of linear and bounded operators on Hilbert, or Banach, spaces [2], [6], [7], [8], [11].

Here we consider the special case of the completely bounded operators on operator spaces. For these notions it can be seen [1], [3], [5].

We begin by recalling some definitions.

An operator space E, in short O.S, is a Banach space, or a normed space before completion, given with an isometric embedding  $J:E\to L(H)$ , where L(H) is the space of all linear and bounded operators  $T:H\to H,H$  being a Hilbert space. We shall identify often E with J(E) and so we shall say that an O.S is a (closed) subspace of L(H).

If  $E \subset L(H)$  is an operator space then  $M_n \oplus E$  can be identified with the space of all  $n \times n$  matrices having entries in E, that it will be denoted by  $M_n(E)$ .

Clearly  $M_n(E)$  can be seen as an o.s. embedded in  $L(H^n)$ , where  $H^n = H \otimes ... \otimes H$  (number of H is n).

Let us denote by  $\|\cdot\|_n$  the norm induced by  $L(H^n)$  on  $M_n(E)$ , in the particular case n=1 we get the norm of E. Taking the natural embedding  $M_n(E) \to M_{n+1}(E)$  we can consider  $M_n(E)$  included in  $M_{n+1}(E)$ , and  $\|\cdot\|_n$  induced by  $\|\cdot\|_{n+1}$ .

Thus we may consider  $\bigcup_n M_n\left(E\right)$  a normed space equipped with it's natural norm  $\left\|\cdot\right\|_{\infty}$  .

We denote by K[E] the completion of  $\bigcup M_n(E)$ . If we denote by

 $K_0 = \bigcup_n M_n$ , the case E = C, then the completion of  $K_0$  coincides isometrically with the  $C^*$ -algebra,  $C(l_2)$ , of all compact operators on the space  $l_2$ .

It is easy to check that  $\bigcup M_n(E)$  can be identified isometrically with  $K_0 \otimes E$ .

The basic idea of o.s. is that the norm of the Banach space E is replaced by a sequence of norms  $\{\|\cdot\|_n\}_n$  on  $\{M_n(E)\}_n$  or by a single norm  $\|\cdot\|_{\infty}$  on the space K[E].

**Definition 1.** Let  $E_1 \subset L(H_1)$  and  $E_2 \subset L(H_2)$  be operator spaces,

 $u: E_1 \to E_2$  be a linear map and

 $u_n:(x_{ij})\in M_n\left(E_1\right)\to \left(u\left(x_{ij}\right)\right)\in M_n\left(E_2\right)$ . We say that u is completely bounded, c.b., if  $\sup_n\|u_n\|<\infty$  and we define  $\|u\|_{c.b.}:=\sup_n\|u_n\|$ .

**Definition 2.** (equivalent) u is completely bounded if the maps  $u_n$  can be extended to a single bounded map  $u_{\infty}: K[E_1] \to K[E_2]$  and we have  $||u||_{c.b.} = ||u_{\infty}||$ .

**Definition 3.** c.b.  $(E_1, E_2) := \{u : E_1 \to E_2 : u \text{ is c.b.}\}$ . We shall consider the c.b.  $(E_1, E_2)$  equipped with  $\|\cdot\|_{c.b.}$ .

Remark 1. The similar definition of the uniform norm for the bounded operators can be written as follows:

$$||u||_{c.b.} = \sup \{||u_{\infty}|| : x \in K[E], ||x|| \le 1\}.$$

Remark 2. Likewise the case of an isomorphism between two Banach spaces, we say that two o.s.  $E_1, E_2$  are completely isomorphic, completely isometric, if there is an c.b. isomorphism  $u: E_1 \to E_2$  with c.b. inverse and in addition  $||u||_{c.b.} = ||u^{-1}|_{u(E_1)}||_{c.b.} = 1$ 

Let  $E_1 \subset L(H_1)$  and  $E_2 \subset L(H_2)$  be operator spaces. There is an embedding  $J: E_1 \odot E_2 \to L(H_1 \otimes H_2)$  defined by  $J(x_1 \otimes x_2)(h_1 \otimes h_2) = x_1(h_1) \otimes x_2(h_2)$ .

We denote by  $E_1 \otimes_{\min} E_2$  the completion of  $E_1 \otimes E_2$  equipped with the norm  $x \to ||Jx||$ .

#### SOME APPROXIMATION IDEALS

Obviously J can be extend to an isometric embedding. So we can see  $E_1 \otimes_{\min} E_2$  as an o.s. embedded into  $L(H_1 \otimes_{\sigma} H_2)$ . This space is called the **minimal**, spatial, tensor product of  $E_1$  and  $E_2$ .  $(H_1 \otimes_{\sigma} H_2)$  is the hilbertian tensor product, [7], [11].)

If  $E \subset L(H)$  is an o.s. then  $M_n \otimes_{\min} E$  can be identified with the space  $M_n(E)$  and K[E] can be identified isometrically with  $K \otimes_{\min} E$ . Thus, for any linear map  $u: E_1 \to E_2$  we have  $\|u\|_{c.b.} = \|I \otimes u: K \otimes_{\min} E_1 \to K \otimes_{\min} E_2\| = \|I \cap u: K \otimes_{\min} E_1 \to K \otimes_{\min} E_2\|_{c.b.}$ . More generally it can be shown that, for any o.s.  $F \subset L(\widetilde{H})$ , we have  $\|I_F \otimes u: F \otimes_{\min} E_1 \to F \otimes_{\min} E_2\| \leq \|u\|_{c.b.}$ . Further on, if  $v: F_1 \to F_2$  is another c.b. map, we obtain

$$||u \otimes v : F_1 \otimes_{\min} E_1 \to F_2 \otimes_{\min} E_2||_{c.b.} \le ||v||_{c.b.} \cdot ||u||_{c.b.}$$

This relation will be very useful in the sequel.

For others properties of the minimal tensor product it can be seen the papers [1], [5], etc.

# 2. Approximation numbers of completely bounded operators

**Definition 4.** Let  $u: E \to F$  be a completely bounded map,  $u \in c.b.(E, F)$ . The approximation numbers,  $a_n^{c.b.}(u)$  will be defined as follows

$$a_n^{c.b.}(u) := \inf\{||u - a||_{c.b.} : a \in c.b.(E, F), rank(a) < n\}, n = 1, 2, ....$$

Remark 3. From this definition it results that  $||u||_{c.b.}=a_1^{c.b.}(u)\geq a_2^{c.b.}(u)\geq ...\geq 0.$ 

**Proposition 1.** The approximation numbers  $a_n^{c,b}$  (u) verify the following inequalities:

1. 
$$\sum_{n=1}^{k} a_n^{c.b.} (u_1 + u_2) \le 2 \cdot \sum_{n=1}^{k} (a_n^{c.b.} (u_1) + a_n^{c.b.} (u_2)), \text{ for } k = 1, 2, ...$$

2. 
$$\sum_{n=1}^{k} a_n^{c.b.} (u_1 \circ u_2) \le 2 \cdot \sum_{n=1}^{k} (a_n^{c.b.} (u_1) \cdot a_n^{c.b.} (u_2)), \text{ for } k = 1, 2, \dots$$

*Proof.* 1) Let  $\varepsilon > 0$ . There are  $a_i$ , i = 1, 2, such that  $rank(a_i) < n$  and  $||u_i - a_i||_{c,b} < a_n^{c,b}(u_i) + \frac{\varepsilon}{2}$ .

We obtain:

$$\begin{aligned} &a_{2,n-1}^{c,b}\left(u_{1}+u_{2}\right) \leq \left\|\left(u_{1}+u_{2}\right)-\left(a_{1}+a_{2}\right)\right\|_{c,b} \leq \\ &\leq \left\|u_{1}-a_{1}\right\|_{c,b} + \left\|u_{2}-a_{2}\right\|_{c,b} \leq \\ &\leq a_{n}^{c,b}\left(u_{1}\right) + a_{n}^{c,b}\left(u_{2}\right) + \varepsilon. \end{aligned}$$

Since  $\varepsilon$  is arbitrary it follows that:

$$a_{2:n-1}^{c.b.}(u_1+u_2) \leq a_n^{c.b.}(u_1) + a_n^{c.b.}(u_2)$$
.

Further on it results:

$$\begin{split} &\sum_{n=1}^k a_n^{c.b.} \left(u_1+u_2\right) \leq \sum_{n=1}^k a_{2\cdot n-1}^{c.b.} \left(u_1+u_2\right) + \sum_{n=1}^k a_{2\cdot n}^{c.b.} \left(u_1+u_2\right) \leq \\ &\leq 2 \cdot \sum_{n=1}^k a_{2\cdot n-1}^{c.b.} \left(u_1+u_2\right) \leq 2 \cdot \sum_{n=1}^k \left(a_n^{c.b.} \left(u_1\right) + a_n^{c.b.} \left(u_2\right)\right). \\ &\text{2) We consider also } a_i, \ i=1,2, \text{ such that } rank \left(a_i\right) < n \text{ and} \end{split}$$

$$||u_i - a_i||_{c,b} < a_n^{c,b} \cdot (u_i) + \frac{\varepsilon}{2}.$$

We obtain:

$$\begin{aligned} & a_n^{c.b.} \left( u_1 \circ u_2 \right) \le \left\| \left( u_1 \circ u_2 \right) - \left[ u_1 \circ a_2 + a_1 \circ \left( u_2 - a_2 \right) \right] \right\|_{c.b.} = \\ & = \left\| \left( u_1 - a_1 \right) \circ \left( u_2 - a_2 \right) \right\|_{c.b.} \le \left( a_n^{c.b.} \left( u_1 \right) + \frac{\varepsilon}{2} \right) \cdot \left( a_n^{c.b.} \left( u_2 \right) + \frac{\varepsilon}{2} \right) . \end{aligned}$$

Since  $\varepsilon$  is arbitrary it follows that:

$$a_{2\cdot n-1}^{c.b.}\left(u_{1}\circ u_{2}\right)\leq a_{n}^{c.b.}\left(u_{1}\right)\cdot a_{n}^{c.b.}\left(u_{2}\right).$$
 Likewise the 1) results 2).

Remark 4. For the case of the linear and bounded operators between Banach spaces the above inequalities are known, [8], [11].

In the sequel we deduce an inequality for the case of the c.b. operator  $u_1 \odot_{\min} u_2$  using a similar method with that from [9], [10], used for the classical case of the bounded operators on Banach spaces.

**Proposition 2.** The approximation numbers  $a_n^{c,b}$   $(u_1 \otimes_{\min} u_2)$  verify the inequalities:

$$\sum_{n=1}^{k} \frac{a_{n}^{c.b.}\left(u_{1} \otimes_{\min} u_{2}\right)}{n} \leq 6 \cdot \sum_{n=1}^{k} \frac{a_{n}^{c.b.}\left(u_{1}\right) \cdot \left\|u_{2}\right\|_{c.b.} + a_{n}^{c.b.}\left(u_{2}\right) \cdot \left\|u_{1}\right\|_{c.b.}}{n}, \text{ for } k = 1, 2, ....$$

*Proof.* Let  $\varepsilon > 0$ . There are  $a_i$ , i = 1, 2, such that  $rank(a_i) < n$  and

$$||u_i - a_i||_{c.b.} \le a_n^{c.b.}(u_i) + \frac{\varepsilon}{2}.$$

We obtain:

$$\begin{aligned} &a_{n^{2}}^{c.b.}\left(u_{1}\otimes_{\min}u_{2}\right)\leq\left\|u_{1}\otimes_{\min}u_{2}-a_{1}\otimes_{\min}a_{2}\right\|_{c.b.}=\\ &=\left\|\left(u_{1}-a_{1}\right)\otimes_{\min}u_{2}-a_{1}\otimes_{\min}\left(u_{2}-a_{2}\right)\right\|_{c.b.}\leq\\ &\leq\left\|u_{1}-a_{1}\right\|_{c.b.}\cdot\left\|u_{2}\right\|_{c.b.}+\left\|a_{1}\right\|_{c.b.}\cdot\left\|u_{2}-a_{2}\right\|_{c.b.}\leq\\ &\leq\left(a_{n}^{c.b.}\left(u_{1}\right)+\frac{\epsilon}{2}\right)\cdot\left\|u_{2}\right\|_{c.b.}+\left\|a_{1}-u_{1}+u_{1}\right\|_{c.b.}\cdot\left(a_{n}^{c.b.}\left(u_{2}\right)+\frac{\epsilon}{2}\right)\leq\\ &\leq\left(a_{n}^{c.b.}\left(u_{1}\right)+\frac{\epsilon}{2}\right)\cdot\left\|u_{2}\right\|_{c.b.}+\left(\left\|a_{1}-u_{1}\right\|_{c.b.}+\left\|u_{1}\right\|_{c.b.}\right)\cdot\left(a_{n}^{c.b.}\left(u_{2}\right)+\frac{\epsilon}{2}\right)\leq\\ &\leq\left(a_{n}^{c.b.}\left(u_{1}\right)+\frac{\epsilon}{2}\right)\cdot\left\|u_{2}\right\|_{c.b.}+2\cdot\left\|u_{1}\right\|_{c.b.}\cdot\left(a_{n}^{c.b.}\left(u_{2}\right)+\frac{\epsilon}{2}\right).\end{aligned}$$

Since  $\varepsilon$  is arbitrary we obtain:

$$a_{n^2}^{c.b.}(u_1 \otimes_{\min} u_2) \leq 2 \cdot (a_n^{c.b.}(u_1) \cdot ||u_2||_{c.b.} + a_n^{c.b.}(u_2) \cdot ||u_1||_{c.b.}).$$

Taking account that the sequence of the aproximation numbers is decreasing we can writte:

$$\begin{split} &\sum_{n=1}^{k} \frac{a_{n}^{c.b.}(u_{1} \otimes_{\min} u_{2})}{n} \leq \sum_{n=1}^{j} \left(2 \cdot n + 1\right) \frac{a_{n}^{c.b.}(u_{1} \otimes_{\min} u_{2})}{n^{2}}, \text{ where } j^{2} \leq k < \left(j + 1\right)^{2}. \\ &\text{Now we obtain:} \\ &\sum_{n=1}^{k} \frac{a_{n}^{c.b.}(u_{1} \otimes_{\min} u_{2})}{n} \leq \sum_{n=1}^{j} \left(2 \cdot n + 1\right) \frac{a_{n}^{c.b.}(u_{1} \otimes_{\min} u_{2})}{n^{2}} \leq 3 \cdot \sum_{n=1}^{j} n \cdot \frac{a_{n}^{c.b.}(u_{1} \otimes_{\min} u_{2})}{n^{2}} \leq \\ &\leq 6 \cdot \sum_{n=1}^{j} \frac{a_{n}^{c.b.}(u_{1}) \cdot ||u_{2}||_{c.b.} + a_{n}^{c.b.}(u_{2}) \cdot ||u_{1}||_{c.b.}}{n} \leq 6 \cdot \sum_{n=1}^{k} \frac{a_{n}^{c.b.}(u_{1}) \cdot ||u_{2}||_{c.b.} + a_{n}^{c.b.}(u_{2}) \cdot ||u_{1}||_{c.b.}}{n}. \\ &\text{This finishes the proof.} \end{split}$$

Remark 5. By means of these approximation numbers we can define special approximation ideals in c.b.(E, F).

# 3. Special approximation ideals

**Definition 5.** Let  $x = \{x_1, x_2, ...\}$  be a real sequence and let card(x) be  $card\{i \in N : x_i \neq 0\}$ .

Let K be the set of all real sequences  $x \in l_{\infty}$  having the following two properties:

1. card(x) < n(x), n(x) is a natural number

2. 
$$x_1 \geq x_2 \geq ... \geq x_{n(x)} \geq 0$$
.

A function  $\Phi: K \to R$  is called a symmetric norming function if:

- 1.  $\Phi(x) > 0$  if  $x \in K$  and  $x \neq 0$ ;
- 2.  $\Phi(\alpha \cdot x) = \alpha \cdot \Phi(x)$ , for every  $\alpha \ge 0$  and  $x \in K$ ;
- 3.  $\Phi(x+y) \leq \Phi(x) + \Phi(y)$ , for every  $x, y \in K$ ;
- 4.  $\Phi(\{1,0,0...\})=1$ ;
- 5. If  $x, y \in K$  and  $\sum_{i=1}^{k} x_i \leq \sum_{i=1}^{k} y_i$ , for every k = 1, 2, ..., then  $\Phi(x) \leq \Phi(y)$ .

Remark 6. The above definition can be extend on the whole space  $l_{\infty}$  taking

 $\Phi\left(x\right) := \lim_{n \to \infty} \Phi\left(\left\{x_1^*,...,x_n^*,0,0...\right\}\right), \text{ where } x^* = \left\{x_i^*\right\}_{i \in N} \text{ is the sequence } \left\{|x_i|\right\}_{i \in N} \text{ rearranged in decreasing order.}$ 

**Definition 6.** In the sequel we shall consider a subclass of c.b.(E, F) which is defined as follows:

$$\Phi - c.b.\left(E,F\right) := \left\{u \in c.b.\left(E,F\right) : \left\|u\right\|_{\Phi}^{c.b.} := \Phi\left(\left\{a_n^{c.b.}\left(u\right)\right\}_n\right) < \infty\right\}.$$

Remark 7. We prove that this class has similar properties with the similar classes defined for linear and bounded operators. (For the case of the Hilbert spaces it can be seen [2], [7] and for the case of the Banach spaces it can be seen [8], [9], [10], [11].)

**Proposition 3.**  $\left(\Phi-c.b.,||.||_{\Phi}^{c.b.}\right)$  is a quasi-normed operator ideal.

*Proof.* 1. Any unidimensional operator,  $u \in c.b.(E, F)$ , belongs to

 $\Phi - c.b.(E, F)$  because, in this case, the sequence  $\{a_n^{c.b.}(u)\} = \{\|u\|_{c.b.}^{\cdot}, 0, 0, ...\}$  and hence  $\Phi(\{a_n^{c.b.}(u)\}_n) = \|u\|_{c.b.}^{\cdot} < \infty$ .

2. If  $u_1, u_2 \in c.b.(E, F)$  then  $u_1 + u_2 \in c.b.(E, F)$ . This results from the proposition 5 (1), and from the properties of  $\Phi$ , as follows:

$$\Phi\left(\left\{a_n^{c,b_n}(u_1+u_2)\right\}_n\right) \le 2 \cdot \Phi\left(\left\{a_n^{c,b_n}(u_1) + a_n^{c,b_n}(u_2)\right\}_n\right) \le 2 \cdot \left(\Phi\left(\left\{a_n^{c,b_n}(u_1)\right\}_n\right) + \Phi\left(\left\{a_n^{c,b_n}(u_2)\right\}_n\right)\right).$$

3. If  $v \in c.b.(E, E)$ ,  $u \in \Phi - c.b.(E, F)$  and  $w \in c.b.(F, F)$  then

 $w \circ u \circ v \in \Phi - c.b.(E, F)$ .

From the proposition 5 (2) and from the definition of  $a_n^{c.b.}(u)$  it follows that  $a_n^{c.b.}(w \circ u \circ v) \leq ||w||_{c.b.} \cdot a_n^{c.b.}(u) \cdot ||v||_{c.b.}$  and hence

$$\Phi\left(\left\{a_n^{c.b.}\left(w \circ u \circ v\right)\right\}_n\right) \le ||w||_{c.b.} \cdot \Phi\left(\left\{a_n^{c.b.}\left(u\right)\right\}_n\right) \cdot ||v||_{c.b.}.$$

Remark 8. We present now some properties similar to the properties of the classical approximation ideals  $L_{\Phi}$ , [8], [11].

**Lemma 1.** The approximation numbers  $a_n^{c.b.}(u)$  verify the inequalities:

$$\sum_{n=1}^{k} a_{2 \cdot n-1}^{c.b.}(u) \le \sum_{n=1}^{k} a_{n}^{c.b.}(u) \le 2 \cdot \sum_{n=1}^{k} a_{2 \cdot n-1}^{c.b.}(u), k = 1, 2, \dots$$

*Proof.* The first inequality is a consequence of the fact that the sequence  $\left\{a_n^{c.b.}(u)\right\}_n$  is decreasing.

The second inequality results as follows:

$$\sum_{n=1}^{k} a_{n}^{c.b.}(u) \leq \sum_{n=1}^{2 \cdot k} a_{n}^{c.b.}(u) \leq \sum_{n=1}^{k} a_{2 \cdot n-1}^{c.b.}(u) + \sum_{n=1}^{k} a_{2 \cdot n}^{c.b.}(u) \leq 2 \cdot \sum_{n=1}^{k} a_{2 \cdot n-1}^{c.b.}(u).$$

Corollary 1.  $||u||_{\widehat{\Phi}}^{c.b.}:=\Phi\left(\left\{a_{2\cdot n-1}^{c.b.}\left(u\right)\right\}_{n}
ight)$  is a quasi-norm equivalent

with 
$$||u||_{\Phi}^{c.b.} = \Phi\left(\left\{a_n^{c.b.}\left(u\right)\right\}_n\right)$$
.

Remark 9. Since 
$$\sum_{n=1}^{k} \left(a_n^{c,b}(u)\right)^p \leq \sum_{n=1}^{k} \left(\frac{1}{n} \cdot \sum_{i=1}^{n} a_i^{c,b}(u)\right)^p \leq$$

$$\leq c(p) \cdot \sum_{n=1}^{k} (a_n^{c.b.}(u))^p, 1$$

see the Hardy inequality [11], it follows that

$$\Phi\left(\left\{\left(a_{n}^{c.b.}\left(u\right)\right)^{p}\right\}_{n}\right) \leq \Phi\left(\left\{\left(\frac{1}{n}\cdot\sum_{i=1}^{n}a_{i}^{c.b.}\left(u\right)\right)^{p}\right\}_{n}\right) \leq c\left(p\right)\cdot\Phi\left(\left\{\left(a_{n}^{c.b.}\left(u\right)\right)^{p}\right\}_{n}\right)$$

and hence 
$$\|u\|_{\Phi_{(p)}}^{c.b.}$$
 is equivalent with  $\overline{\|u\|_{\Phi_{(p)}}^{c.b.}} := \Phi_{(p)}\left(\left\{\frac{1}{n} \cdot \sum_{i=1}^{n} a_{i}^{c.b.}\left(u\right)\right\}_{n}\right)$ ,

where  $\Phi_{(p)}\left(\{x_i\}\right) = \Phi\left(\{x_i^p\}\right)^{\frac{1}{p}}$  is a symmetric norming function, [2], [6], [7], [11], for 1 .

Because  $a_n^{c.b.}(u) \leq (a_1^{c.b.}(u) \cdot ... \cdot a_n^{c.b.}(u))^{\frac{1}{n}} \leq \frac{1}{n} \cdot \sum_{i=1}^n a_i^{c.b.}(u)$  it follows, also,

that

$$\left\{ a_{n}^{c.b.}(u) \right\}_{n} \in l_{\Phi_{(p)}} \text{ if } g_{n}(u) := \left\{ \left( a_{1}^{c.b.}(u) \cdot \ldots \cdot a_{n}^{c.b.}(u) \right)^{\frac{1}{n}} \right\}_{n} \in l_{\Phi_{(p)}},$$

$$\left\{ x_{n} \right\} \in l_{\Phi_{(p)}} \iff \Phi_{(p)}\left( \left\{ x_{n} \right\} \right) < \infty.$$

Remark 10. If we consider the special case of the function

$$\overline{\Phi}_{(p)}:\left(\left\{a_{n}^{c.b.}\left(u\right)\right\}\right)\to\Phi\left(\left\{\frac{\left(a_{n}^{c.b.}\left(u\right)\right)^{p}}{n}\right\}\right)^{\frac{1}{p}},$$

where  $1 \leq p < \infty$ , the classes  $\overline{\Phi}_{(p)} - c.b.(E, F)$  are tensor product stable.

**Proposition 4.** If  $u_k \in \overline{\Phi}_{(p)} - c.b.(E_k, F_k)$ , k = 1, 2., then

$$u_1 \otimes_{\min} u_2 \in \overline{\Phi}_{(p)} - c.b. (E_1 \otimes_{\min} E_2, F_1 \otimes_{\min} F_2).$$

*Proof.* It is similar to that for the classical approximation ideals [10], [11]. First we remark that, using the relation

$$a_{n^2}^{c.b.}(u_1 \otimes_{\min} u_2) \le 2 \cdot (a_n^{c.b.}(u_1) \cdot ||u_2||_{c.b.} + a_n^{c.b.}(u_2) \cdot ||u_1||_{c.b.})$$

we can obtain

$$\sum_{n=1}^{k} \frac{\left(a_n^{c.b.} \left(u_1 \otimes_{\min} u_2\right)\right)^p}{n} \leq c\left(p\right) \cdot \sum_{n=1}^{k} \frac{\left(a_n^{c.b.} \left(u_1\right) \cdot ||u_2||_{c.b.}\right)^p + \left(a_n^{c.b.} \left(u_2\right) \cdot ||u_1||_{c.b.}\right)^p}{n},$$

for k = 1, 2, ..., see Proposition 6 for p = 1.

Now taking into account the properties of the functions  $\Phi$  it follows that

$$\Phi\left(\left\{\frac{\left(a_{n}^{c,b,}\left(u_{1}\otimes_{\min}u_{2}\right)\right)^{p}}{n}\right\}\right) \leq c\left(p\right) \cdot \Phi\left(\left\{\frac{\left(a_{n}^{c,b,}\left(u_{1}\right) \cdot ||u_{2}||_{c,b,}\right)^{p}}{n} + \frac{\left(a_{n}^{c,b,}\left(u_{2}\right) \cdot ||u_{1}||_{c,b,}\right)^{p}}{n}\right\}\right).$$

Hence

$$\begin{split} & \overline{\Phi}_{(p)} \left( \left\{ a_{n}^{c,b,} \left( u_{1} \otimes_{\min} u_{2} \right) \right\} \right) \leq \\ & \leq c_{1} \left( p \right) \cdot \left( \overline{\Phi}_{(p)} \left( \left\{ a_{n}^{c,b,} \left( u_{1} \right) \right\} \right) \cdot \| u_{2} \|_{c,b,} + \overline{\Phi}_{(p)} \left( \left\{ a_{n}^{c,b,} \left( u_{2} \right) \right\} \right) \cdot \| u_{1} \|_{c,b,} \right) \leq \\ & \leq 2 \cdot c_{1} \left( p \right) \cdot \overline{\Phi}_{(p)} \left( \left\{ a_{n}^{c,b,} \left( u_{1} \right) \right\} \right) \cdot \overline{\Phi}_{(p)} \left( \left\{ a_{n}^{c,b,} \left( u_{2} \right) \right\} \right), \\ & c_{1} \left( p \right) = c \left( p \right)^{\frac{1}{p}} \text{ and } \| u_{k} \|_{c,b} \leq \overline{\Phi}_{(p)} \left( \left\{ a_{n}^{c,b,} \left( u_{k} \right) \right\} \right), \ k = 1, 2. \end{split}$$
The proof is fulfilled.

Remark 11. The above result remains true if we consider the maximal tensor product.

### References

- D.P. Blecher, V.I. Paulsen, Tensor products of operator spaces, J. Funct. Anal. 99 (1991) 262-292.
- [2] I. Gohberg, M. Krein, Introduction on the theory of the linear, non-adjoint operators on Hilbert spaces, Nauka, Moscow, 1965. (in Russian)
- [3] V. I. Paulsen, Completely bounded maps and dilations, Pitman Research Notes in Mathematics, Longmans, London, 1986.
- [4] V. I. Paulsen, Representation of function algebras, abstract operator spaces and Banach space geometry, J. Funct. Anal. 109 (1992) 113-129.
- [5] G. Pisier, Operator spaces and similarity problems, Documenta Math. (I.C.M. 1998) I-429-452.
- [6] N. Salinas, Symmetric norm ideals and relative conjugate ideals, Trans. A.M.S. 188 (1974) 213-240.
- [7] R. Schatten, Norm ideals of completely continuous operators, Berlin-Göttingen-Heidelberg, 1960.
- [8] N. Tita, Öperators of  $\sigma_p$ -class on non-Hilbert spaces, Studii Cercet. Mat. 23 (1971) 467-487.(in Romanian)
- [9] N. Tiţa, On a class of  $l_{\Phi,\rho}$  operators, Collect. Math. 32 (1981) 257-279.
- [10] N. Tita, Some inequalities for the approximation numbers of tensor product operators, Anal. St. Univ. "Al. I. Cuza" Iași 40 (1994) 329-331.
- [11] N. Tita, S-numbers operator ideals, Ed. Univ. Transilvania, Braşov, 1998.

DEPARTMENT OF MATH., FAC. OF SCIENCE, "TRANSILVANIA" UNIV., 2200 BRAŞOV, ROMANIA

